

Genesis: The Miracles and the Predictions According to Spiritism.  
(La Genèse, les Miracles et les Prédications selon le Spiritisme)

By Allan Kardec  
Translated by the spirit-guides of W. J. Colville  
Boston: Colby & Rich, 1883

[Title page missing in original]

# CONTENTS.



## CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
CHARACTER OF THE SPIRITUAL REVELATION . . .	17

## CHAPTER II.

GOD. — EXISTENCE OF GOD. — THE DIVINE NATURE. — PROVIDENCE . . . . .	64
---	----

## CHAPTER III.

GOOD AND EVIL. — SOURCE OF GOOD AND EVIL. — INSTINCT AND INTELLIGENCE. — DESTRUCTION OF LIVING BEINGS BY ONE ANOTHER . . . .	84
--	----

## CHAPTER IV.

THE SCIENTIFIC NOTE IN GENESIS . . . . .	103
--	-----

## CHAPTER V.

SYSTEMS OF THE ANCIENT AND MODERN WORLD . . .	115
---	-----

## CHAPTER VI.

GENERAL URANOGRAPHY. — SPACE AND TIME. — MAT- TER. — LAWS AND FORCES. — FIRST CREATION. — UNI- VERSAL CREATION. — SUNS AND PLANETS. — SATEL- LITES. — COMETS. — THE MILKY WAY. — THE FIXED STARS. — THE DESERTS OF SPACE. — ETERNAL SUC- CESSION OF WORLDS. — UNIVERSAL LIFE. — SCIENCE. — MORAL CONSIDERATIONS . . . . .	125
---	-----

## CHAPTER VII.

	PAGE
GEOLOGICAL OUTLINE OF THE EARTH. — GEOLOGICAL PERIODS. — PRIMITIVE STATE OF THE GLOBE. — PRIMARY PERIOD. — TRANSITION PERIOD. — SECONDARY PERIOD. — TERTIARY PERIOD. — DILUVIAN PERIOD. — POST-DILUVIAN PERIOD. — BIRTH OF MAN . . .	165

## CHAPTER VIII.

THEORIES OF THE EARTH. — THEORY OF PROJECTION. — THEORY OF CONDENSATION. — THEORY OF INCRUSTATION . . . . .	195
---	-----

## CHAPTER IX.

REVOLUTIONS OF THE GLOBE. — GENERAL OR PARTIAL REVOLUTIONS. — BIBLICAL DELUGE. — PERIODICAL REVOLUTIONS. — FUTURE INUNDATIONS . . .	204
---	-----

## CHAPTER X.

ORGANIC GENESIS. — FIRST FORMATION OF LIVING BEINGS. — VITAL PRINCIPLE. — SPONTANEOUS GENERATION. — SCALE OF MATERIAL BEINGS. — MAN . . .	215
---	-----

## CHAPTER XI.

SPIRITUAL GENESIS. — SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE. — UNION OF SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE WITH MATTER. — HYPOTHESES UPON THE ORIGIN OF HUMAN BODIES. — INCARNATION OF SPIRITS. — RE-INCARNATION. — EMIGRATION AND IMMIGRATION OF SPIRITS. — THE ADAMIC RACE. — DOCTRINE OF FALLEN ANGELS . . .	231
---	-----

## CHAPTER XII.

MOSAIC GENESIS. — SIX DAYS. — PARADISE LOST . . .	265
---	-----

## CONTENTS.

15

### MIRACLES.

#### CHAPTER XIII.

	PAGE
THE MIRACLES ACCORDING TO SPIRITISM . . . .	293

#### CHAPTER XIV.

FLUIDS. — NATURE AND PROPERTIES OF FLUIDS. — EXPLANATION OF SOME THINGS BY REPUTE SUPERNATURAL . . . . .	309
--	-----

#### CHAPTER XV.

THE MIRACLES OF THE GOSPEL. — PRELIMINARY OBSERVATIONS. — DREAMS. — STAR OF THE "WISE MEN OF THE EAST." — DOUBLE SIGHT. — CURES. — POSSESSED PERSONS. — RESURRECTIONS. — JESUS WALKS UPON THE WATER. — TRANSFIGURATION. — THE TEMPEST STILLED. — MARRIAGE AT CANA. — MAKING OF THE LOAVES OF BREAD. — TEMPTATION OF JESUS. — WONDERFUL THINGS AT THE DEATH OF JESUS. — APPEARANCE OF JESUS AFTER HIS DEATH. — DISAPPEARANCE OF THE BODY OF JESUS . . . . .	345
--	-----

### THE PROPHECIES.

#### CHAPTER XVI.

PROPHECIES IN THE LIGHT OF SPIRITISM . . . .	405
--	-----

#### CHAPTER XVII.

PREDICTIONS OF THE GOSPELS. — NO ONE IS A PROPHET IN HIS OWN COUNTRY. — DEATH AND PASSION OF JESUS. — PERSECUTION OF THE APOSTLES. — IMPENITENT CITIES. — RUIN OF THE TEMPLE AND OF JERUSALEM. — MALEDICTIONS ON THE PHARISEES. — "MY WORDS WILL NOT PASS AWAY." — THE CORNER-STONE.	
--	--



	PAGE
— PARABLE OF THE VINE-DRESSERS WHO WERE HOMI- CIDES. — “ONE FLOCK AND ONE SHEPHERD.” — COM- ING OF ELIAS. — ANNOUNCEMENT OF THE COMFORTER. — SECOND COMING OF CHRIST. — SIGNS FORETOLD. — “YOUR SONS AND YOUR DAUGHTERS SHALL PROPHE- SY.” — LAST JUDGMENT . . . . .	420

## CHAPTER XVIII.

THE TIME HAS ARRIVED. — SIGNS OF THE TIME. — THE NEW GENERATION . . . . .	462
--	-----

# GENESIS ACCORDING TO SPIRITISM.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### CHARACTER OF THE SPIRITUAL REVELATION.

CAN one consider Spiritism as a revelation? If it be such, what is its character? Upon what is its authenticity founded? By whom, and in what manner, has it been given? Is the doctrine of Spiritism a revelation in the liturgical sense of the word? that is to say, is it in all points the product of occult teaching from on high? Is it absolute, or capable of modifications? In conveying to men perfect truth, would not revelation have the effect of hindering them from employing their faculties, since it would save them the work of research? What can be the authority of the teachings of the spirits if they are not infallible, and superior to those of humanity? What is the utility of the morality that they preach if this is other than that of the Christ whom men acknowledge? What are the new truths which they bring to us? Has man need of a revelation, and can he find in himself and in his conscience all that is necessary to lead him aright? Such questions are important to answer. Let us define at first the sense of the word. "Revelation," *to reveal*, derived

from the word "veil," from the Latin *velum*, signifies literally to take away the veil, and, figuratively, to uncover, to make the acquaintance of a secret or unknown fact. In its most general sense it is employed with reference to every unknown thing which is brought to light, to every new idea which is given to man. Indeed, all the sciences which have revealed the mysteries of nature are revelations; and one can well say that there is for us a constant revelation. Astronomy has revealed to us the astral universe of which we were ignorant; geology, the formation of the earth; chemistry, the law of affinities; physiology, the functions of the organism, etc. Copernicus, Galileo, Newton, Laplace, and Lavoisier are revealers.

The essential character of all revelation must be truth. To reveal a secret is to make known a fact. If the thing is false, it is not a fact, and consequently not a revelation. All so-called revelation contradicted by facts is not revelation even if attributed to God. He not being able to tell an untruth or to deceive, we know it cannot emanate from him. It is necessary to consider it as merely a human conception. What is the attitude of the professor to his pupils if it is not that of a revealer? He teaches them that which they do not know, that which they would have neither the time nor the possibility to discover for themselves, because science is the collective work of centuries, and of a multitude of men who have each contributed the results of their observations, by which those who come after them profit.

Teaching is, then, in reality the revelation of certain scientific or moral, physical or metaphysical, truths given by men who know them to others who

know them not, and who, without their aid, would have remained ignorant of them. But the professor teaches that which he has learned: he is a revealer of the second order. The man of genius teaches that which he has found for himself: he is the primitive revealer; he carries the light which, from one place to another, makes itself known. Where would be humanity without the revelations from men of genius who appear from time to time? But what are men of genius? Why are they men of genius? Whence do they come? What becomes of them? Let us observe that the greater part of them are born with transcendent faculties, and innate knowledge that a little labor suffices to develop. They belong really to humanity since they are born, live, and die like mortals. Where, then, have they obtained this knowledge which comes so mysteriously to them? Will one say with the materialist that chance has given to them cerebral matter in greater quantity and better quality? In this case they would have no more merit than one vegetable greater and more savory than another. Will one say with certain Spiritualists that God has given them a more favored soul or mind than those of common men? — a supposition also entirely illogical, since it accuses God of partiality. The only rational solution of this problem is in the pre-existence of soul, and in a plurality of existences. The man of genius is a spirit who has lived a longer time, who has consequently acquired more and progressed more, than those who are less advanced. In becoming incarnate he brings to earth what he knows; and, as he is much wiser than others without the necessity of learning, he is that which one calls a man of genius.

from the word "veil," from the Latin *velum*, signifies literally to take away the veil, and, figuratively, to uncover, to make the acquaintance of a secret or unknown fact. In its most general sense it is employed with reference to every unknown thing which is brought to light, to every new idea which is given to man. Indeed, all the sciences which have revealed the mysteries of nature are revelations; and one can well say that there is for us a constant revelation. Astronomy has revealed to us the astral universe of which we were ignorant; geology, the formation of the earth; chemistry, the law of affinities; physiology, the functions of the organism, etc. Copernicus, Galileo, Newton, Laplace, and Lavoisier are revealers.

The essential character of all revelation must be truth. To reveal a secret is to make known a fact. If the thing is false, it is not a fact, and consequently not a revelation. All so-called revelation contradicted by facts is not revelation even if attributed to God. He not being able to tell an untruth or to deceive, we know it cannot emanate from him. It is necessary to consider it as merely a human conception. What is the attitude of the professor to his pupils if it is not that of a revealer? He teaches them that which they do not know, that which they would have neither the time nor the possibility to discover for themselves, because science is the collective work of centuries, and of a multitude of men who have each contributed the results of their observations, by which those who come after them profit.

Teaching is, then, in reality the revelation of certain scientific or moral, physical or metaphysical, truths given by men who know them to others who

know them not, and who, without their aid, would have remained ignorant of them. But the professor teaches that which he has learned: he is a revealer of the second order. The man of genius teaches that which he has found for himself: he is the primitive revealer; he carries the light which, from one place to another, makes itself known. Where would be humanity without the revelations from men of genius who appear from time to time? But what are men of genius? Why are they men of genius? Whence do they come? What becomes of them? Let us observe that the greater part of them are born with transcendent faculties, and innate knowledge that a little labor suffices to develop. They belong really to humanity since they are born, live, and die like mortals. Where, then, have they obtained this knowledge which comes so mysteriously to them? Will one say with the materialist that chance has given to them cerebral matter in greater quantity and better quality? In this case they would have no more merit than one vegetable greater and more savory than another. Will one say with certain Spiritualists that God has given them a more favored soul or mind than those of common men? — a supposition also entirely illogical, since it accuses God of partiality. The only rational solution of this problem is in the pre-existence of soul, and in a plurality of existences. The man of genius is a spirit who has lived a longer time, who has consequently acquired more and progressed more, than those who are less advanced. In becoming incarnate he brings to earth what he knows; and, as he is much wiser than others without the necessity of learning, he is that which one calls a man of genius.

But that which he knows is the fruit of an anterior work, and not the result of divine preference. Before entering anew into earth-life, he was an advanced spirit. He is re-incarnated, it may be for the purpose of benefiting others, or possibly for the opportunity of acquiring more knowledge himself. Men progress incontestably by themselves by means of their intelligence; but, left to their own forces, progress is very slow, if they are not aided by more advanced minds, as the scholar is by his professors. All nations have among them men of genius who have appeared at divers epochs to give an impulsion and draw men from their inertia. If we admit the solicitude of God for his creatures, why should we not also admit that the spirits are capable, by their energy and superior knowledge, to assist humanity to advance; that they are re-incarnated at the desire of God, with the view of aiding progress in a definite manner; that they receive a mission as an ambassador receives one from his sovereign? Such is the *rôle* of great geniuses. What come they to do, if not to teach to men truths of which they are ignorant, and of which they would not acquire the knowledge during still longer periods of time, had they not come to give the stepping-stone by which men are enabled to elevate themselves more rapidly? These geniuses who appear at different epochs like brilliant stars, leaving after them a long, luminous track for humanity, are missionaries,—or, better, Messiahs. If they taught men nothing new, their presence would be entirely useless. The new facts they bring to light, be they of a physical or philosophical order, are revelations. If God ordains re-

vealers of scientific truths, he can, for a stronger reason, create them for moral truths, which are an essential element of progress. Such are the philosophers whose ideas have lived through the ages. In the special sense of religious faith, revelation informs us more particularly of spiritual facts which man cannot know of himself, that he cannot discover by means of his senses, and of which the knowledge is given him by God or by his messengers in direct word or by inspiration. In this case revelation is always made to favored men, designated under the names of prophets or Messiahs; viz., ambassadors, — missionaries having a mission to transmit truths to men. Considered from this point of view, revelation implies absolute passivity. One accepts it without examination, without discussion.

All religions have their revealers; and, although all are far from having known all the truth, they sustained their claim for being providential: for they were appropriate to the time and place where they lived, to the particular genius of the people to whom they spoke, and to whom they were relatively superior. Notwithstanding the errors of their doctrines, they have at least awakened minds, and by so doing have sown seeds or germs of progress, which later become unfolded, or will yet blossom into a brighter day than the Christian Era. It is then wrong to anathematize the name of orthodoxy; for the day will come when all beliefs, however diverse in form, but which in reality repose upon the same fundamental principles, God and the immortality of the soul, will form themselves into a grand and vast unity, when reason shall have triumphed over prejudice. Unhappily, reli-



gious systems through all time have been instruments of domination. The *rôle* of prophet has tempted the ambitious among those in subordinate positions, and a multitude of pretended revealers, or Messiahs, who, by reason of the prestige of this name, have taken advantage of credulity to satisfy their pride, their cupidity, or their indolence, finding it easier to live at the expense of their dupes than in any other way. The Christian religion has been a shelter for these parasites. On this subject let us call serious attention to chap. xxi. of the "Gospel according to Spiritism," "There will be false Christs and false prophets."

Are there direct revelations from God to men? This is a question which we dare not settle either affirmatively or negatively in an absolute manner. The thing is not radically impossible; but nothing gives certain proof of it. That which need not be doubted is that the spirits nearest God in perfection enter into his thoughts, and can transmit them. As to incarnated revealers, according to the hierarchical order to which they belong, and to the degree of their personal knowledge, they can draw their instructions from their own knowledge, or receive them from spirits more elevated, from messengers ordained of God. The former, speaking in the name of God, have been sometimes mistaken for God himself. These kinds of communications are not strange to those who are acquainted with spiritual phenomena, and the manner of establishing communication between embodied and disembodied spirits. Instructions can be transmitted by divers means,—by inspiration pure and simple, by the hearing of the word, by seeing spirit-teachers in visions or appa-

ritions, be it in dreams or in a state of wakefulness, of which one finds many examples in the Bible, the Gospel, and in the sacred books of all nations. It is, then, rigorously exact to say that the greater part of revealers are inspired mediums, hearing or seeing: from which it does not follow that *all* are revealers, and still less intermediaries direct from God or his especial messengers.

Pure spirits alone receive the word of God, with the mission of transmitting it; but one knows now that all spirits are far from being perfect, and there are those who give false appearances. That is why St. John has said, "Believe not all spirits, but try the spirits whether they are of God" (1 John iv. 4).

There are serious, true, and deceitful communications, examples of which are found in Apocryphal Scriptures. The essential character of divine revelation is eternal truth. All revelation stained with error, or subject to change, cannot emanate from God. It is thus that the law of the Decalogue still maintains all its original importance; while other Mosaic laws that are essentially transitory, often in contradiction with the law of Sinai, are the personal and political work of the Hebrew legislature. The customs of the people becoming milder, their laws improved. These laws have of themselves fallen into disuse, whilst the Decalogue has remained standing like a beacon-star to humanity. Christ has made it the base of his edifice, whilst he has abolished the other laws. If they had been the work of God, they would have remained standing. Christ and Moses are the two great revealers who have changed the face of the world, and there is the proof of their divine mis-

sion. A work purely human could have no such power.

An important revelation is being given at this present epoch. It is that which shows to us the possibility of communication with beings of the spiritual world.

This knowledge is not new, without doubt: but it had remained until our day in a state of dead letter; that is to say, without profit for humanity. Ignorance of the laws which ruled these communications had stifled them by superstition. Man was incapable of drawing from them any salutary deduction. It was reserved for our day to disembarass them from their ridiculous accessories, to comprehend the power, and to cause to shine the light which is destined to illumine the future.

Spiritism having taught us of the invisible world which surrounds us, and in the midst of which we live without doubt, the laws which govern it, its connection with the visible world, the nature and state of the beings who inhabit it, and by tracing the destiny of man after death, is a veritable revelation in the scientific acceptance of the word.

By its nature, the spiritual revelation has a twofold character: it is at the same time a divine and a scientific revelation. It is the first in that its coming is providential, and not the result of the initiative and premeditative design of man; the fundamental points of the doctrine being the fact of the teaching given by spirits commissioned by God to enlighten men concerning things whereof they were ignorant, — things they could not learn by themselves, and which it is important for them to know to-day, as

they are ready to comprehend them. It is the second because it informs us that this teaching is a privilege granted to no one individual, but that it is given to all the world by the same means (or in the same way) that those who transmit and those who receive it are not passive beings, excused from the work of observation and research; that they are not called upon to abnegate their judgment and their free will; that their control of themselves is not interdicted, but, on the contrary, recommended; and, finally, that the whole doctrine has not been enunciated in every part, nor imposed upon blind belief, but is deduced by the work of man, by the observation of facts that the spirits place before us, while the instructions that they give to us compel us to study, comment, compare, until we arrive at a knowledge of consequences and applications. In a word, that which characterizes the spiritual revelation is the divine source from which it proceeds,—that the initiative belongs to the spirits, and that the elaboration is the work of man.

As a means of elaboration, Spiritism proceeds in exactly the same course as the exact sciences; that is to say, it applies the experimental method. Some facts of a new order present themselves, which cannot be explained by known laws. It teaches us to observe, compare, analyze them, and, from effects, arrive at causes; it reveals the laws which govern them; it then deduces the consequences, and seeks for useful applications; it establishes no one preconceived theory. Thus it has not presented as an hypothesis either the existence or intervention of spirits, neither the existence of the *peri-spirit*, or re-incarnation, or

any one principle of the doctrine. It has proved the existence of spirits in the beyond, and with it the other principles connected with the spiritual life. These are not facts which are revealed after a theory has been formed to confirm them ; but the theory has subsequently arisen to explain the facts, and make a *résumé* of them. It is rigorously exact to declare that Spiritism is a science of observation, and not the product of the imagination.

Let us cite an example : there happens in the world of spirits a very singular occurrence, and one that assuredly no one would have imagined. It is that some disembodied spirits think they are still embodied. However, the superior spirits, who know it well, do not tell us, in response to our anticipation, "There are some spirits who believe that they still live in the earth-life, who have preserved their tastes, their habits, and their instincts." We have invoked the manifestation of this category of spirits in order that we may observe them.

Having then seen spirits uncertain of their state, or affirming that they were yet of this world, attending to their ordinary occupations, the example has proved the fact. The multiplicity of similar facts has proved that it was not an exception, but one of the phases of spirit-life. We have been permitted to study all the varieties and causes of this singular illusion ; have recognized that this situation is characteristic of those but little advanced morally, and that it is peculiar to certain kinds of death ; that it is not necessarily of very short duration, but can continue for months, and even years. It is thus that theory is born of observation. It is the same of all other principles of

doctrine. Just as science, properly speaking, has for object the study of the laws of material principles, the special object of Spiritism is the knowledge of the laws of spiritual principles. Now, as this latter class of principles is one of the forces of nature, as it acts incessantly and reciprocally upon the material principles, the result of it is, that knowledge of one cannot be complete without knowledge of the other; that separated, they are incomplete; that science without Spiritism finds itself utterly powerless to explain certain phenomena by laws of matter alone; that, having abstracted the spiritual principle, it is arrested in its researches,—while Spiritism without science would lack support and control, and would be considered an illusion. Had Spiritism appeared before scientific discoveries, it would have been an abortive work, like every thing which comes before its proper time.

All sciences are joined to and succeed one another in rational order. One is born of the other, according as they find support in anterior knowledge and ideas. Astronomy, one of the first which might have been cultivated, has remained in the infancy of its errors till the moment when physics came to reveal the law of the forces of natural agents. Chemistry, being unable to do any thing without physics, must needs come next in succession, in order that they should walk together, and lean upon one another. Anatomy, physiology, zoölogy, botany, and mineralogy have been recognized as veritable sciences only by the aid of the lights carried by physics and chemistry. Geology, born of yesterday, without astronomy, physics, chemistry, and all the others, would have failed to possess true elements of vitality. It could not be born until they had been recognized.

Modern science has done justice to the four primitive elements of the ancients, and from observation to observation it has arrived at the conception of one generative element alone in all the transformations of matter: but matter by itself is inert; it has neither life, thought, nor sentiment; its union with spiritual principle is a necessity. Spiritism has not invented this principle, but was the first to demonstrate it by undeniable proofs. It has studied it, analyzed it, and revealed it in evident action. To the material element it has come to add the spiritual. The material and spiritual elements are the two living principles or forces of nature. By the indissoluble union of these two elements, we can explain without difficulty a crowd of facts hitherto inexplicable. In its essence simply, and as having for its object the study of one of these two constituent elements of the universe, Spiritism lays forcible hold of the greater part of the sciences. It could only work thus after the elaboration of these sciences, and, above all, after they had exhibited their powerlessness to explain all things by the laws of matter alone.

Spiritism is accused by some of being in alliance with Magic and Sorcery; but men forget that Astronomy has for her elder sister Astrology, which is not totally discarded from among the beliefs of to-day; that Chemistry is the daughter of Alchemy, with which no scientific man would dare to occupy himself to-day. No one denies, however, that there were in Astrology and Alchemy the germs of truth, from which have sprung actual sciences; and that, notwithstanding its ridiculous formulas, Alchemy has revealed the law of affinity between material bodies. Astrology was

supported by its knowledge of the position and movement of the stars it had studied ; but, owing to ignorance of the true laws which ruled the mechanism of the universe, the stars were, for the vulgar, mysterious beings ruling the destinies of men, superstition lending to them a moral influence and prophetic meaning. When Galileo, Newton, and Kepler had demonstrated the laws from which the telescope had withdrawn the veil, and given to men that glance into the depths of space which certain people considered so indiscreet, the planets appeared to us as simple worlds, similar to our own ; and all the lattice-work of the marvellous crumbled away. It is the same with Spiritism in regard to magic and sorcery : the two latter were supported truly by spiritual manifestations, as astrology was upon the movement of the stars ; but, in the ignorance of the laws which rule the spiritual world, there were joined to these communications ridiculous practices and beliefs, to which modern Spiritism, the fruit of experience and observation, has done justice. Assuredly the distance which separates Spiritism from magic and sorcery is greater than that which divides astronomy from astrology, chemistry from alchemy. The desire to confound them proves that one knows not the first thing about them. The simple fact of the possibility of communion with beings of the spiritual world opens up to us incalculable consequences of the highest gravity and importance. Here a new world is revealed to us, and one which is so much the more important in that it awaits all men without exception ! Knowledge concerning it cannot fail to produce, in a general sense, a profound modification



in the customs, character, habits, and beliefs which exert so great an influence upon man's social life.

It *has* caused a revolution in ideas, a revolution so great and powerful that it is not circumscribed to any one people, much less to one caste, but reaches simultaneously the heart of all classes, all nationalities, all civilizations. For the best of reasons, Spiritism is considered the third grand revelation. Let us see wherein the revelations differ, and how they are attached to one another. Moses, as a prophet, has revealed to men the knowledge of the only true God, Sovereign Master of all things. He has promulgated the law of Sinai, and laid the foundation of the true faith. As a man he has been the legislator of the people, through whom this primitive faith has exerted an influence over all the earth. Christ, taking from the ancient laws all that is eternal and divine, rejecting only that which was transitory, because purely disciplinary and of human conception, also adds a revelation of the future life of which Moses had not spoken,—with its retributions and recompenses which await all mankind after physical dissolution. (See “Spiritual Review,” 1861, pp. 90, 280). The most important part of the revelation of Christ, its Alpha and Omega, the corner-stone of his doctrine, is the new character given to divinity. God is no more the vindictive, jealous, and terrible God of Moses, the cruel and unmerciful God who bathes the earth with human blood, who orders the massacre and extermination of nations, without excepting women, children, and the aged; who chastises those who spare the victims. He is no more the unjust God who punishes a whole community for the faults of its

chief, even punishing the innocent in the stead of the guilty, visiting the sins of the fathers upon the children, but a merciful God, sovereignly just and good, full of tenderness and mercy, who pardons the repentant sinner, and rewards every one according to his works. He is no more the God of a favored people, the God of armies, presiding at combats in order to sustain his own cause against the gods of other nations, but the common Father of humanity, who extends his protection over all his children, and calls them all his own. He is no more the God who recompenses or punishes by giving or withholding earthly goods, who makes glory and good fortune to consist in conquering rival nations, and placing them in a state of slavery, or in the multiplicity of progeny; but he is the God who says to men, "Your true country is not of this world: it is in the celestial kingdom; it is there that the lowly in heart shall be elevated, and the proud abased." He is no more the God who makes a virtue of vengeance, ordering us to exact "an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth," but the God of mercy, who says, "Forgive if you would be forgiven; return good for evil; do unto others as ye would that others should do unto you." He is no more the exacting and tyrannical God who imposes the most rigorous laws upon us in regard to the ceremonies by which he desires to be adored, who is offended with the inobservance of a formula, but the great and good God who is honored not by the form or ceremony, but by the sincere, heartfelt thought. He is no more the God to be feared, but the God to be loved. God being the pivot of all religious beliefs, the base of all civilization, *the character of all reli-*

*gions conform to the idea they give of God.* Those which make him vindictive and cruel think they honor him by acts of cruelty, by butcheries and tortures; those who make him a partial and jealous God are intolerant, over-scrupulous in forms, according as they believe him to be more or less tainted with weaknesses and human errors. The whole doctrine of Christ is founded upon the character he attributes to divinity.

With an impartial God, perfectly just, good, and merciful, he has been able to make of the love of God and charity toward one's neighbor the express condition of salvation, and to say, "On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets." Upon this belief alone he has been able to base the principle of the equality of men before God, and of universal fraternity. This revelation of the true attributes of divinity, joined to that of the immortality of the soul and of man's future life, deeply modified the mutual relations of men, imposed upon them new obligations, caused them to view the present life under another light. It effected a marked change for the better in the manners and social relations of humanity. It is incontestably, in its consequences, the most important point in the revelation of Christ, of which one can never fully appreciate the importance. Sad to say, it is the point least commented upon, — the one which has been misconstrued in a greater degree than all his other teachings. However, Christ adds, "Many things I say unto you which you do not understand. I have yet many things to say unto you; but ye cannot bear them now." That is why I speak to you in parables; but later I will

send to you the Comforter, the Spirit of truth, and when he is come he will guide you into all truth. If Christ did not impart all the truth which he was capable of giving, he thought it better to leave some truths in shadow until men should be capable of comprehending them. From his own acknowledgment, his teachings were then incomplete. Since he announces the coming of the spirit who should add unto them, he prophesied that they would misunderstand his words; that they would deviate from his teachings; in a word, that they would deteriorate from that which he had done for them, but every thing he declared should be re-established. Now, one re-establishes only that which has been defective. Why did he call the new Messiah the Comforter? This significant name, without ambiguity, is a revelation in itself. It predicted that men would have need of consolation, which, he implies, should spring from an insufficient knowledge of truth. They would find this in a belief they could not then immediately espouse.

Scarcely ever has Christ been so clear and explicit as in these last words, which have gained the *particular* attention of but few people, perhaps because teachers have failed to place them in the right light to deepen their prophetic sense. If Christ has not been able to develop his teachings in a complete manner, it is because men were so ignorant, and they could acquire knowledge only with time. He treated of things which appeared to them visionary and unreal in their undeveloped state. In order to complete his mission, it was only necessary to explain and develop truths already given. It was unneces-

sary to add new truth ; for the germ of all was found in his words : the key only was wanting which should unlock their meaning. But who dares to attempt to change the meaning of the Holy Scriptures? Who has the right? Who possesses the necessary light, if not the theologians? Who will dare to undertake it? Science first, which asks permission of no one to make known the laws of nature. She crushes under her feet the most beloved errors and prejudices. What man has this right?

In this age of intellectual emancipation and of liberty of conscience the right of examination belongs to all the world ; and the Scriptures are no more the holy ark upon which one fears to lay a finger in the expectation of being crushed thereby. In regard to special necessary knowledge, without contesting that of the theologians, all brilliant as were they of the Middle Ages, and particularly the fathers of the Church, they were not, however, strong enough to condemn as heresy the movement of the earth and belief in the antipodes ; but, from all known periods of the world's formation till the present time, they have thrown the anathema at every new revelation.

Men have not been able to explain the Scriptures by the exclusive aid of that knowledge which they (mixed with false or uncertain ideas) possessed concerning the laws of nature, revealed later by science : that is the reason why theologians themselves have really mistaken the sense of certain words and facts in the Gospel. Determined, at any price, to find the confirmation of a preconceived thought, they remained always in the same groove, without ever changing their point of view, in such a manner that

they saw only that which they wished to see. Wise theologians as they were, they could not comprehend facts depending upon laws of which they knew nothing. But who could judge between the diverse and often contradictory interpretations given outside of theology? In the future logic and good sense, men, more and more enlightened, according as new facts and new laws will be revealed, will learn how to distinguish Utopian systems from those based upon reality. Now science has revealed certain laws. Spiritism brings others also to light. Collectively they are indispensable to the correct understanding of the sacred texts of all religions, — those of Confucius and Buddha equally with those of Christianity. As to theology, it cannot know how to judiciously plead an exception for the contradictions of science, since it is not always in accord with itself. Spiritism, taking its starting-point at the words of Christ, as Christ has taken his from Moses, is a direct consequence of his doctrine.

To vague ideas of the future life it adds a revelation of the existence of the invisible world which surrounds us, and peoples all space; and, poising belief there, it gives it a body, a consistence, a reality in thought. It defines the connection between the soul and the body, and raises the veil which conceals from men the mysteries of life and death. By Spiritism man knows whence he comes, where he is capable of going, why he is upon the earth, why he suffers temporarily, and can see, above all, the justice of God. He learns that souls progress unceasingly through a series of progressive existences until they shall have attained to that degree of perfection in which God

only reigns. He learns that all souls, having the same starting-point, are created equal, with the same opportunity to progress in virtue of their own free will; that all are of the same essence, and that there is between them only a difference of accomplished progress; that all have the same destiny, and will attain the same end more or less promptly according to their labor and desire to progress. He learns that there are no disinherited ones, no lost souls, neither one more favored than another; that God has not created some favored ones who are excused from the labor which is imposed upon others to facilitate their progression; that there are no creatures perpetually condemned to unhappiness and suffering; that those designated under the name of demons are spirits yet undeveloped and imperfect, who do wrong in the world of spirits as they did here upon earth, but who will advance and ameliorate their condition; that the angels are not beings distinct from the rest of creation, but spirits who have attained that height through the same earthly sufferings and temptations as others undergo; that thus there are not multiplied creations of different classes among intelligent humanity, but that all creation springs from the great law of unity which rules the universe, and that all beings gravitate towards a common end, which is perfection, without one being favored at the expense of others, all holding the thread of their destiny in their own hands.

By the communications that man can now establish with those who have left the earth, he receives not only the material proof of the existence and individuality of the soul, but he comprehends the solidarity

which joins the living and the dead in this world, and those of this world with those of other worlds. He knows their situation in the world of spirits; he follows them in their migrations; he can testify of their joys and troubles; he knows why they are happy or unhappy, and the end which awaits all, according to the good or evil they accomplished. These communications introduce him to a future life, which he can observe in all its phases and conditions. The future is no more a vague hope: it is a positive fact, a mathematical certitude. Thus he has no more fear of death: it is for him a deliverance, the gate of true life. By the study of Spiritualism, one learns that happiness or unhappiness in the spiritual life is experienced according to the degree of perfection or imperfection one has obtained; that each one suffers the direct and natural consequences of his own faults; that these consequences endure as long as the cause which has produced them; that thus the culprit would suffer eternally if he persisted eternally in his fault, but that suffering ceases with repentance and reparation. Now, as our joy and sorrow are within our own grasp, each one can, by virtue of his free will, prolong or abridge his sufferings, as the invalid suffers from his excesses as long as he indulges in them. If reason repels, as incompatible with the goodness of God, the idea of everlasting punishment, perpetual and absolute, often inflicted for one fault alone,—the tortures of hell, which no repentance, however ardent or sincere, can lessen,—it acknowledges this distributive impartial justice which is extended to all; never shutting the door of return to goodness, and extend-



ing unceasingly the helping hand to the shipwrecked one, instead of allowing him to sink without aid into the abyss. The plurality of existences, of which Christ has taught, though merely touching upon it, as with many other principles of his doctrine, is one of the most important laws revealed by Spiritism, — for this reason, that it reveals the necessity and reality of progress. By this law can be explained all the apparent anomalies which human life presents, — its differences of social position; the premature deaths, which, without re-incarnation, would render abridged lives useless for souls; the inequality of intellectual and moral aptitudes, owing to the antiquity of the spirit, who has lived a longer or a shorter time, and has become more or less learned and progressed, and who, being reborn, brings into requisition the knowledge of anterior existences. With the doctrine of the creation of a soul at every birth, one falls necessarily into the belief in beings favored of God. Men are strangers to one another. Nothing unites firmly: the ties of family are purely physical. They are not solidarities of a past in which they did not exist. With this springs nonentity after death. All relations of life cease: there are no unions for the future. By re-incarnation they form solidarities of the past and the future, their connection perpetuating itself in the spiritual and material world. Fraternity has for base the changeless laws of nature. Goodness has an objective existence, while there is no reversal of inevitable consequences.

With belief in re-incarnation, the prejudices of races and castes fall dead, since the same spirit can be reborn rich or poor, lord or beggar, master or

subordinate, free or enslaved, man or woman. Of all the arguments brought against the injustice of servitude and slavery, against the subjection of the weaker to the rule of the stronger, there is no one of them which expresses so logically the reason therefor as the law of re-incarnation. If, then, re-incarnation is founded upon a law of nature which is the source of universal brotherhood, it is based upon the same law as that of the equality of social rights and of freedom. Physically, some men are born inferior and subordinate; but, spiritually, all are free and equal. Therefore it is a duty to treat inferiors with goodness, benevolence, and humanity. He who is in a lower earthly position to-day may have been once our equal or our superior, perhaps a relation or a friend; and we may become in our turn the subordinate of him whom we command. Take away from man the free, independent spirit surviving matter, and you make of him an organized machine, without will or responsibility, without other rein than the civil law, simply an intelligent animal. Expecting nothing after death, nothing hinders him from augmenting the joys of the present. If he suffers, he has in perspective only despair and nonentity for refuge. With certainty of a future, of seeing again those whom he has loved, of encountering again those whom he has offended, all his ideas change. Had Spiritism only drawn man from the sad doubt of a future life, it would have done more for his moral amelioration than all the disciplinary laws which have bridled him sometimes, but changed him never. Without pre-existence of the soul, the doctrine of original sin is not only irreconcilable with the justice

of God, who would render all men responsible for the fault of one, but is senseless; while the penalty cannot be justifiable, because the soul did not exist at the epoch where it is pretended its responsibility commenced.

With pre-existence and re-incarnation man carries into his re-embodiment the germ of his past imperfections, the defects of which he has not been cured, which betray themselves in his native instincts, in his propensities for this or that vice. It is his veritable original sin, to the consequences of which he is naturally submitted, but with this capital difference, that he carries the burden of his own faults, and not that of the fault of another; and this difference at one and the same time consoles, encourages, and honors sovereign equity, each separate existence offering to man the means of making reparation for sins committed, and of progress either by overcoming some imperfection, or by acquiring some fresh knowledge, until he becomes sufficiently purified to have no more need of earthly experience, when he will live exclusively a glorious, eternal life of spirit. For the same reason, he who has progressed morally carries into re-embodiment his moral qualities with him, just as he who has progressed intellectually carries his intelligent ideas with him. The former is identified with goodness, which he practises without effort, without calculation; that is to say, without thinking about it. While he who is obliged to combat low tendencies is always in a battle with them. The first is already conqueror, the second on the way to victory. There is, then, original virtue, as there is original knowledge, and original sin, or, more correctly,

imperfection. Experimental Spiritism has studied the properties of spiritual fluids, and their action upon matter. It has demonstrated the existence of a fluidic body, in which the ancients had a partial belief, designated by St. Paul under the name of "spiritual body;" that is to say, the gaseous body of the soul, which remains after the destruction of the material body. It is known to-day that this envelope is inseparable from the soul; that it is one of the constituent elements of a human being; that it is the vehicle for the transmission of thought; and that during earthly life it serves as a connection between spirit and matter. This spiritual body plays such an important part in the organism and in a multitude of productions, that there needs to be allied to physiology and psychology the study of its properties, of the spiritual fluids, and of the physiological attributes of the soul. This opens new horizons to science, and gives the key to a great number of unknown phenomena, the laws which rule them being until now unknown. Phenomena are denied by Materialism because they are linked with Spiritism, and, because called by another name than miracles or supernatural occurrences, are ignored by those of supernatural belief. Among others are the phenomena of double sight, visions of objects at a distance, natural and artificial somnambulism, psychic effects of catalepsy and lethargy, prescience, presentiments, apparitions, transfigurations, the transmission of thought, fascination, instantaneous cures, obsessions and possessions, etc. In demonstrating that these phenomena repose upon laws as natural as the electrical phenomena, and that there exist normal

conditions in which they can be reproduced, Spiritism destroys the empire of the marvellous and supernatural, and consequently the source of the greater part of superstition. If it founds a belief in the possibility of certain things regarded by some as chimerical, it precludes one from believing in others of which it has demonstrated the impossibility and irrationality.

Spiritism, very far from denying or destroying the gospel, on the contrary comes to confirm, explain, and prove it. By the new laws of nature that it reveals, it throws light upon the obscure points of the teachings of Jesus, upon all that he has done and said, in such a way that those to whom certain parts of the gospel were formerly unintelligible, or seemed inadmissible, comprehend them without trouble by the aid of Spiritism, accept them, and better understand their importance as they are able to separate the reality from the allegory. Christ appears to them in a grander light. He is no longer simply a philosopher: he is a divine Messiah. Besides the moral power that Spiritism wields is the importance that it gives to all actions of life. It points with its finger at the consequences of goodness and wickedness; gives moral force and courage; gives consolation in afflictions by inducing unalterable confidence in the future, by the thought of having near one the beings that one has loved, the assurance of seeing them again, the possibility of conversing with them, the certainty that all one has accomplished, all one has acquired of intelligence, science, or morality *till the last hour of life*, nothing is lost, that all yields advancement. One finds that Spiritism realizes all the

promises of Christ in regard to the Comforter that he promised to send. Now, as it is the Spirit of Truth who presides over the great work of regeneration, the promise of his coming is even now realized by the fact that it is he who is the true Consoler.<sup>1</sup>

If to these facts one adds the unheard-of rapidity of the propagation of Spiritism, notwithstanding all which has been done to combat it, one cannot deny that its coming is providential, since it triumphs over all the forces of allied human antagonism. The facility with which it is accepted by such a large number of persons, and that without constraint, without other pressure than the power of the idea, proves that it responds to a need, — that of believing in something after the belief in nothing, which scepticism caused; and consequently it has come at the right time. Afflictions are many in number. It is not then

<sup>1</sup> Many fathers of families deplore the premature death of children on account of the education for which they have made great sacrifices, and say that it is wholly lost. With a belief in Spiritism, they do not regret these sacrifices, and would be ready to make them, even with the certainty of seeing their children die; for they know that, if the latter do not receive the benefits of such education in the present life, it will serve, first, to advance them as spirits, then as so much of intellectual property for a new existence, so that when they shall return they will have intellectual capital which will render them more apt in gaining new knowledge. Examples of this are those children who are born with innate ideas, who know, as one might say, without the trouble of learning. If, as fathers, they have not the immediate satisfaction of seeing their children put this education to profit, they will enjoy it certainly later, be it as spirits or earthly beings. Perhaps they can be again the parents of these same children that they call happily endowed by nature, and who owe their aptitude to a former education; as also, if some children do wrong on account of the negligence of their parents, the latter may have to suffer later by troubles and griefs which will be caused by them in a new existence. (Gospel according to Spiritism, chap. 5, No. 21: Premature Deaths.)

surprising that so many men accept a doctrine which comforts them in preference to one which gives no reasonable hope of a future; for it is to the unhappy more than to the happy of earth that Spiritism addresses itself particularly. The invalid welcomes a physician with more joy than he who is well. Now, the afflicted are the invalids, and the Comforter is the physician. You who combat Spiritism, if you desire that one leave it to follow you, give something *more* than it supplies, and something better; cure soul-wounds more surely; give more consolation, more satisfaction to the heart, more legitimate hopes, greater certitudes; paint for the future a more attractive picture, and withal one more rational; but think not to gain your end, you with the perspective of nonentity, you with the alternative of the flames of hell, or of useless, sanctimonious, perpetual contemplation!

The first revelation was personified in Moses, the second in Christ, the third in no one individual. The two first are individuals; the third is collective, which is an essential character of great importance. It is collective in this sense, that it has been made in favor of no one person: consequently, no one can be called the exclusive prophet of it. It has been given simultaneously in all parts of the earth to millions of persons, of all ages, of all faiths, of all conditions, from the lowest to the highest according to the prediction given by the author of the Acts of the Apostles: "In the latter days, saith the Lord, I will send my spirit upon all flesh; your sons and your daughters shall prophesy; your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams." It

has not sprung from any one special civilization, but serves as a rallying-point for all.<sup>1</sup>

The two former revelations, being the product of a personal teaching, have been forcibly localized; that is to say, they have taken place in one locality from which knowledge has extended gradually; but centuries were necessary in order for it to reach the extremities of the globe, and even then without envioning it altogether. The third has this peculiarity, that, not being personified in one individual, it is rained down simultaneously upon thousands of different points, which have become centres or focuses of radiation. These centres multiplying themselves, their rays meet again little by little, like circles formed by a multitude of stones thrown into the water, in such a manner that in a given time they will have covered the entire surface of the globe. Such is one of the causes of the rapid propagation

<sup>1</sup> Our special *rôle* in the grand movement of ideas which is produced by Spiritism, and which is already operating, is that of an attentive observer who studies facts to seek their cause, and to draw from them definite results. We have confronted all those whom we could possibly gather around us; we have compared and commented upon instructions given by the spirits from all parts of the globe; then we have arranged the whole methodically. In a word, we have studied, and given to the public the fruit of our researches, without attributing to our labors other value than that of a philosophical work deduced from observation and experience, never desiring to put ourselves in the place of a chief of doctrine, or desiring to thrust our ideas upon any one. In publishing them, we have used a common right, and those who have accepted them have done so freely. If these ideas have found numerous sympathizers, it is that they have had the advantage of responding to the aspirations of a great number: of this we are not vain, as their origin belongs not to us. Our greatest merit is that of perseverance and devotion to the cause we have espoused. We have only done that which others also can do. That is why we have made no pretension of being a prophet or Messiah, and do not believe ourselves such.



of the doctrine. If it had surged upon a single point, if it had been the exclusive work of one man, it would have formed a sect around him; but a half century might have passed before it had passed the limits of the country where it would have taken root, while Spiritism, after a period of ten years, had planted its beacon-lights from pole to pole. This unheard-of circumstance in the history of teachings gives to it an exceptional force, and an irresistible power of action. Indeed, if any thing checks it at one point in one country, it is literally impossible to curb it in all points in all countries. For one place where it will be disregarded, there will be a thousand where it will flourish. As no one can reach it in an individual, one cannot attain to the spirits who are the source of it. Now, as spirits are everywhere, it is impossible that they could be made to disappear from the globe. They are always appearing; and the belief in them reposes upon a fact in nature, and one cannot suppress a law of nature. This fact alone should convince those who are not quite persuaded to become believers ("Spir. Review," February, 1865, p. 38: "Perpetuity of Spiritism").

However, these different centres might have remained for a long time isolated from one another, situate as are some in far-distant countries. A connection was necessary between them, which should place them in communion with their brothers in belief by teaching them that which was done elsewhere. This union of thought, which would have been impossible to the Spiritism of antiquity, is accomplished by the numerous publications which are now found everywhere; which condense, under a unique, con-

cise, and methodical form, the teaching given everywhere through multiplied methods of expression, and in diverse languages. The two first revelations could have been only the result of a direct teaching: they were imposed on the mind by the authority of the word of the Master, men being too undeveloped to join in the work of their elaboration. Let us remark at the same time a very sensible shade of resemblance between them, important to the progress of morals and ideas: it is that they were given to the same people in the same locality, but at an interval of nearly eighteen hundred years. The doctrine of Moses is absolute, despotic: it admits not of discussion, but imposes itself upon all people by force. That of Jesus is essentially that of counsel and advice: it is freely accepted, and gains its advocates by persuasion; it is discussed by the living person of its Founder, who disdains not to argue with his adversaries. The third revelation comes at an epoch of emancipation and of intellectual maturity, where developed intelligence cannot agree to play a passive *rôle*; where man accepts nothing blindly, but wishes to see whither one conducts him; to know the why and the how of every thing. It claims to be at the same time the product of a teaching, and the fruit of labor, of research, and of free examination.

Spirits teach us only that which is necessary to put us in the way of truth; but they abstain from revealing to man that which he can discover by himself, leaving to him the care of discussing, controlling, and submitting all to the crucible of reason, leaving him often to learn the lesson at his own expense. It gives to him the principal, the materials from which to draw

the interest and to put it in use. The elements of spiritual revelation having been given simultaneously at a multitude of points to men of all social conditions and of different degrees of knowledge, it is very evident that observations could not have been made everywhere with the same effect; that the sequences drawn from them, the relation of the laws which govern this order of phenomena,—in a word, the conclusion which ought to establish ideas,—could proceed only from the harmony and correlation of facts. Now, every isolated centre, circumscribed in a limited circle, seeing most often only a particular order of manifestations, sometimes in appearance contradictory, having communications generally with the same category of spirits, and, moreover, guided by local influence and party spirit, finds it materially impossible to embrace the whole, powerless to join isolated observations to a common principle. Each one judging facts according to his knowledge and his anterior beliefs, or by the particular opinions of the spirits manifesting, there would soon be as many theories and systems as centres, of which no one would be complete, in default of elements of comparison and of control. In a word, each one would remain content with his partial revelation, believing it to include all the truth, for want of knowing that in a hundred other places one could obtain more or better. It is well to observe further, that nowhere has spiritual teaching been given in a complete manner. It touches upon so great a number of observations, upon subjects so diverse, which exact, it may be knowledge, it may be a special aptitude for arriving at the heart of them, that it is simply impossible to

unite at the same point all the necessary conditions. Teaching having become collective, and not individual, the spirits have divided the labor by disseminating the subjects of study and observation, as in certain manufactories different parts of the object manufactured are divided among different workmen. Revelation is thus partially given in diverse places, and by a multitude of intermediaries; and it is in this manner still to be followed up, for all is not revealed. Every centre finds in the other centres the complement of that which it obtains, and it is only the joining together of all the instructions which can constitute the doctrine of Spiritism.

It is, moreover, necessary to group the facts gleaned, in order to see their corresponding similarity, to gather the different documents, instructions given by spirits upon all points and all subjects, in order to compare them and analyze them by studying their analogy and difference. Communications being given by spirits of all orders more or less clearly, it is necessary to learn the degree of confidence reason would accord to them; to distinguish the systematic, individual, and isolated ideas from those which had the sanction of the general teaching of the spirits; to separate the Utopian from the practical; to cut away those which were notoriously contradictory, judged by positive science and healthy logic; to utilize the errors even, the information given by spirits of the lowest sphere, for a knowledge of the invisible world; and to form of it a homogeneous whole. In a word, a centre of elaboration is necessary, independent of all preconceived ideas, of all prejudices of sect, resolved to accept a self-evident truth, though

it be contrary to one's personal opinion. This centre forms itself by the force of things, and without premeditated design.<sup>1</sup>

If this book ("Spirits' Book") has gained the sympathies of the majority, it is because it was the expression of the sentiments of this same majority, and that it responded to its aspirations. It is also because each one found there the confirmation, and a rational explanation of that which he in particular obtained. If it had disagreed with the general teachings of the spirits, it would have received no favor, and would have promptly fallen into oblivion. Now, around whom is one to rally? It is not man, who is nothing by himself, only a master-workman, who dies and disappears, but around an idea which perishes not when it emanates from a source superior to man. This spontaneous concentration of scattered forces has given place to an immense connection, a unique monument to the world, a living picture of the true history of modern Spiritism; reflecting, at the same time, partial works, the multiplication of sentiments which has developed the doctrine, the moral results, the devotion and the weakness, — precious archives for posterity, who will be able to judge men and things by authentic documents.

In the presence of these unexceptional testimonies, what will become in time of all false allegations,

<sup>1</sup> The "Spirits' Book," the first work which took a philosophical view of the doctrine, by the deduction of moral sequences from facts, which had approached all parts of the belief, in touching upon the most important questions that it raised, has been, since its appearance, the rallying-point towards which the individual works have spontaneously converged. It is worthy of note that from the publication of this book dates the era of the Spiritist philosophy, previously coming under the head of curiosities of experience.

defamations of envy and jealousy? From this state of things rises a double current of ideas; some going from the extremity to the centre, others returning from the centre to the circumference. It is thus that the doctrine has promptly marched towards unity, notwithstanding the diversity of sources from which it has emanated; that the divergent systems have little by little fallen, on account of their isolation, and failure to obtain the sympathy of the majority. A communion of thought is now established between different centres. Speaking the same spiritual language, they comprehend and sympathize with one another from one end of the world to the other. The Spiritists have been found to be stronger: they have battled with more courage; they have marched with a more assured step, now that they are no more alone, and have found a support, a link which attaches them to the great family. The phenomena of which they were witnesses are no longer strange, abnormal, contradictory, since they are found to agree with the general laws of harmony; since, glancing at it as a whole, they see the grand humanitarian object.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A significant testimony, as remarkable as touching, of this communion of thought which is established between Spiritists by conformity of belief, are the prayerful demands which come to us from far-distant lands, from Peru to the extremities of Asia, from persons of diverse nationalities and religions, whom we have never seen. Is it not the prelude of the establishment of the one great church which is preparing itself, the proof of the firm stand Spiritism is taking everywhere? It is remarkable that of all the societies formed with the premeditated intention of seceding by proclaiming divergent principles,—as those who, by reason of self-love or otherwise, wishing not to have the appearance of sustaining the common law, have believed themselves strong enough to go alone, to have enough light to pass as counsellors,—not one has succeeded in establishing a long-lived or popular idea: all have died out or vegetated in the shade.

But how is one to know if a principle is taught everywhere, or if it is the result of an individual opinion only? Isolated societies not having the knowledge of that which was said elsewhere, it was necessary that a central one should gather all the information, ascertain the opinion of the majority, and send the knowledge to all.<sup>1</sup>

There is no science which has in all its parts proceeded from the brain of one man. All, without exception, are the product of successive observations, leaning upon preceding ones, as upon a known point, in order to arrive at an unknown one. It is thus that the spirits have proceeded with Spiritism. That is why their teaching is gradual. They approach questions only in proportion and in measure, as the principles upon which they ought to lean are suffi-

How could it be otherwise, since, in order to distinguish themselves, instead of endeavoring to give the greatest amount of benefit to the world, they rejected those principles of the doctrine which give to it the most powerful attraction, those which are the most consoling, encouraging, and rational?

If they had comprehended the power of the moral elements which alone induce unity, they would not have been rocked in a chimerical illusion; but, mistaking their little circle for the universe, they have seen in the adherents only a society which could easily be overthrown by one entertaining contrary opinions. They strangely misapprehended the essential character of the doctrine, and this error could lead only to deception. In place of destroying unity, they destroyed the connection which could give them strength and life. (See *Spiritual Review*, April, 1866, pp. 106 and 111: *Spiritism without Spirits; Independent Spiritism.*)

<sup>1</sup> Such is the object of our publications, which can be considered as the result of this. All opinions are discussed there; but the questions are arranged as principles only after having received the sanction of the controls, who alone can give them lawful strength and affirmation. That is why we do not accept, without due thought, any one theory: therefore the doctrine proceeding from general instructions is not the product of a preconceived system. It is largely this fact which gives it strength, and assures its future.

ciently elaborated, and as opinion is ripe to assimilate them.

It is remarkable, that, each time particular centres have wished to approach premature questions, they have obtained only contradictory responses, and never conclusive ones. When, however, the favorable moment arrives, the instruction is given universally at nearly the same moment of time. There is, at the same time, between the march of Spiritism and that of the sciences, a capital difference. It is, that the latter have attained their present advancement only after long intervals of time, whilst only a few years have sufficed for Spiritism, not to gain the culminating point, but at least to gather a sum of facts to constitute a doctrine. That is obtained by the innumerable concourse of spirits, who, by the will of God, manifest simultaneously ; each one bringing the contingent of their knowledge. The result is, that all parts of the doctrine, instead of being successively elaborated during many centuries, have been concocted almost simultaneously in a few years, and that this has sufficed to group them in order to form a whole. God has willed it thus, firstly, in order that the edifice should progress more rapidly ; secondly, in order that it should have a permanent and immediate control in the universality of the teaching, each part having value and authority only by its connection with the whole : all becoming harmonious, finding their place in the general edifice, and each one arriving in due time.

In confiding, not to one spirit alone, the care of the promulgation of the doctrine, God has willed that the lowest as well as the highest among the spirits, as



well as among men, should carry each his stone to the edifice, in order to establish between them a structure of co-operative solidarity, which has failed to all doctrines springing from one source alone. On the other hand, every spirit, the same as every man, having only a limited sum of knowledge, they were incapable of treating *ex professo* the innumerable questions which Spiritualism touches. That is why the doctrine, in order to fulfil the desires of the Creator, could not be the work of one spirit alone, nor of one medium. It could proceed only from the united work of the many, — the one controlled by the other.<sup>1</sup> A later character in the spiritual revelation, which is drawn from the conditions in which it is produced, is that, leaning upon facts, it is, and ever must be, essentially progressive, like all sciences based upon observation. In its essence it is allied to science, which, being a revelation of the laws of nature by a certain order of facts, cannot be contrary to the will of God, the Author of these laws. The discoveries of science glorify, instead of debasing, God. They destroy only that which men have built upon the false ideas they have formed of God. Spiritism is based then only upon absolute principle, — that which is demonstrated by proof, or that which results logically from observation. Touching all the branches of social economy, to which it lends the aid of its own discoveries, it will assimilate itself always with all progressive doctrines, of whatever order they may be. It has arrived at a state of practical truth,

<sup>1</sup> See in *The Gospel according to Spiritism*, p. 6, and *Spiritual Review*, April, 1864, p. 90: *Authority of the Spiritual Doctrine; Universal Control of the Teachings of the Spirits.*

and discarded the Utopian ideas which would have destroyed it. In ceasing to be that which it is, it would deceive in regard to its origin and its providential object. Spiritism, marching hand in hand with progress, will never be overthrown, because, if new discoveries should demonstrate that it is in error upon a point, it would modify itself in regard to it. If a new truth is revealed, it accepts it.

What is the utility of the moral doctrine of the spirits, since it is no other than that of Christ? Has man need of a revelation? and can he find all that within himself which is necessary to guide him? God has without doubt given to man a guide in his conscience, which says to him, "Do unto others that which thou wouldst they should do unto you." This moral philosophy is certainly inscribed in the heart of man; but do all know how to read it there? Have men never misconstrued these wise precepts? What have they done with the ethics of Christ? Do those who teach them practise them? Have they not become a dead letter, a beautiful theory, good for others, but not for one's self? Would you reproach a father for repeating a hundred times the same instructions to his children if they did not profit by them? Why should God do less than a father of a family? Why should he not send from time to time special messengers to men, charged with recalling them to their duties, with reinstating them in that "narrow path" from which they have wandered, with opening the eyes of those who are blind to wisdom, as the most advanced men are sent as missionaries to the savage and barbarous? The spirits teach no other morality than that of Christ, for the reason that there is no better.

But, then, of what good is this instruction, since it teaches that which we know? One could say the same of the ethical teachings of Christ, which were taught five hundred years before he lived by Socrates and Plato in almost identical words; also by all moralists who repeat the same thing under many forms and words. The spirits come simply to augment the number of moralists, with the difference, that, manifesting themselves everywhere, they are heard in the cottage as well as in the palace by the ignorant as well as the learned. That which the teaching of spirits adds to that of Christ is the knowledge of the laws which bind the living to the dead, which complete the vague ideas which he gave of the soul, its past and future, and which the laws of nature give as sanction to his doctrine.

By the aid of new lights carried by Spiritism and the spirits, man comprehends the solidarity which binds all beings together. Charity and fraternity become social necessities. Man does from conviction that which he did only for duty's sake; and this is better when men will practise the moral teachings of Christ. Then alone will they be able to say that they have no more need of embodied or disembodied moralists; then God will send them no more of them. The latter is one of the most important questions which is based upon the title of this chapter: What is the authority of spiritual revelation, since it emanates from beings whose light is limited, and who are not infallible? The objection would be serious if this revelation consisted only of the spirit instructions, — if we should hold it as from them exclusively, and accept it with closed eyes. It

is without value until man carries to it the co-operation of his knowledge and judgment, as the spirits are constrained from putting it in the way of deductions which he can draw from observation of facts. Now, the manifestations in their innumerable variety are facts. Man studies them, and seeks in them the law. He is aided in this work by spirits of all orders, who are collaborators rather than revealers in the usual sense of the word. He submits their sayings to the control of logic and good sense. In this way he benefits by some special knowledge which is derived from their position, without abdicating the use of his own reason. The spirits being none other than the souls of men, in communicating with them we do not go away from humanity, which is a capital circumstance to consider. Men of genius who have been the beacon-lights of humanity have come to us from the spirit-world, as they have re-entered it on quitting the earth. Since spirits can communicate with men, these same geniuses can give us instructions under a spiritual form, as they have done in a corporal one. They can instruct us after death, as they did in life. They are invisible, instead of visible, which is all the difference.

Their experience and knowledge ought not to be less; and if their word, like that of man's, had authority, it ought not to have less because that they are in the land of spirits. But there are not only superior spirits which manifest, there are also those of all orders; and that is necessary in order to initiate us into the true character of the spiritual world, by showing it to us in all its phases. By this means the relations between the visible and invisible world are

more intimate, the connection is more evident. We see more clearly whence we came, and whither we go. Such is the essential object of these manifestations. All spirits, in whatever degree to which they may attain, teach us something; but, as they are more or less enlightened, it is left to us to determine whether they are good or evil, and to profit by their teaching as it permits. Now all, whomsoever they may be, can teach and reveal to us facts of which we are ignorant, and which but for them we should never know. Wise, incarnated spirits are powerful individualities, — indisputably so; but their action is restrained and necessarily slow in propagating itself.

Allowing that one among them should come alone, — be it even Elias, Moses, Socrates, or Plato, — to reveal to us in these latter days the state of the spiritual world, which one among them would have proved the truth of his assertions in this time of scepticism? Would not men have regarded him as a dreamer or utopist? And, admitting that his teachings were accepted as the absolute truth, centuries would pass away before they would be accepted by the masses. God in his wisdom has not ordained it thus: he has willed that the instruction be given by the spirits themselves, and not by the embodied ones, in order to convince men of their existence, and that it might take place simultaneously over all the earth, which may have been to propagate it the more rapidly, or that we might find in the coincidence of the teaching a proof of its truth, each one having thus the means of convincing himself. The spirits come not to free man from work, study, or research: they bring no ready-made science; they leave him to

his own strength in that which he can discover for himself. The spirits know perfectly well to-day that for a long time experience has demonstrated the error of the opinion which attributed to spirits the possession of all knowledge and wisdom, and that it was sufficient to address one's self to the first spirit which came, in order to know all things. After leaving the earth, spirits occupy one out of many spiritual planes, as upon earth there are superior and vulgar persons. Many spirits then know scientifically and philosophically less than certain men: they tell no more, and often less, than they know. As among men, the most advanced can teach us more, and give us more judicious advice, than those less advanced. To demand counsel of spirits is not to address supernatural powers, but persons like ourselves, — those to whom we would turn for counsel in their earthly life, as parents, friends, and individuals more enlightened than ourselves.

Here is an important fact for those who are ignorant of Spiritism, and have formed a false idea of the nature of the world of spirits and of the condition of affairs beyond the tomb. What is then the utility of these manifestations, or, as we may say, this revelation, if the spirits know no more than ourselves, or if they do not tell us all they know? Firstly, as we have said, they abstain from giving us that which we can acquire by labor. Secondly, there are facts which they are not permitted to reveal, because we are not sufficiently advanced to receive them. But, aside from this, the conditions of their new existence extend the circle of their perceptions. They see that which they saw not upon earth, freed from the tram-

mels of matter. Delivered from the cares of the corporeal life, they judge things from a more elevated point, from a healthier one; their perspicuity embraces a broader horizon; they perceive their errors, and disembarass themselves of human prejudices. It is in this that the superiority of spirits over embodied humanity consists: therefore their counsel will be, according to their degree of advancement, more judicious and disinterested than that of the embodied. Conditions are found by which they can instruct us in principles of which we are ignorant. Until now men had created only suppositions in regard to the future. That is why beliefs upon this point have been divided into systems so numerous and so divergent, — from a belief in nothing to fantastic ideas of hell-fire and paradise. To-day we have ocular demonstration: the actors themselves from the life beyond the tomb, who alone can give us knowledge of it, come to tell us what it is. These manifestations serve, then, to give us knowledge of the invisible world which surrounds us, of which, without them, we should not be aware of the existence. This knowledge alone should be considered of the highest importance, even supposing that the spirits were incapable of teaching us any thing more. If you should go into a strange country by yourself, would you reject the teachings of the most humble peasant whom you chanced to encounter? Would you refuse to interrogate him about the state of the land because that he was only a peasant? You would not expect from him, certainly, intelligence of a very high character; but such as it is, and in his sphere, he will be able, upon certain points, to give

you better than a wise man who does not know the country. You will draw from his indications sequences which you could not do of yourself. He will have been at least a useful instrument for your observations, had he served only to make known to you the customs of the peasants. It is the same in connection with the spirits, where the lowest can teach us something.

A common incident will explain the matter better. A ship loaded with emigrants departs for a far-distant locality. It carries men of all conditions, the relatives and friends of whom remain at home. One learns that this ship has been wrecked. No trace remains of it; no news is obtained in regard to its fate. It is thought that all the passengers have perished; and mourning is in all the families. However, the entire company, without the loss of a single soul, has landed upon an unknown soil, which is abundant and fertile, where all live happily under favoring skies; but their friends are ignorant of their fate. Now, one happy day another ship reaches their shore: it finds all the shipwrecked ones safe and well. The happy news spreads with lightning-like rapidity. Each one says, "Our friends are not lost;" and they give thanks to God. They cannot see each other; but they correspond, exchange testimonies of affection, and joy succeeds to sadness. Such is terrestrial life and life beyond the grave before and after modern revelation. The latter, like the second ship, carries to us the good news of the survival of those who are dear to us, and the certitude of one day rejoining them. Doubt in regard to their fate and our own exists no more; discouragement is effaced by hope.



But other results are added to enrich this revelation. God, judging humanity ripe enough to penetrate the mystery of its destiny, and to contemplate with composure new marvels, has permitted the veil between the known and unknown worlds to be raised. The fact of the manifestations has nothing supernatural about it: it is spiritual humanity come to talk to humanity in the flesh, and to say to it, "We exist: nothingness exists not. Behold that which we are, and that which you will be: the future is the same for you as to us. You walk in darkness: we come to throw light upon your way, and to prepare it before you. Terrestrial life was all you could comprehend, because you saw nothing beyond. We come to say to you, in showing the spiritual life to you, the earthly life is as nothing. Your sight was arrested at the tomb: we come to show you the splendid horizon beyond it. You knew not why you suffer upon earth; now, in suffering, you see the justice of God. Goodness was unfruitful for the future: it will have henceforth an object, and will be a necessity. Fraternity was only a beautiful theory: it is now firmly established as a law of nature. Under the empire of the belief that death ends all, immensity is void, egotism reigns master among you, and your watchword is, 'Each one for himself.'" With a certitude of the future, infinite space is peopled with infinitude. Emptiness and solitude do not exist: solidarity joins all beings both this side and beyond the tomb together. It is the reign of charity with the device, "Each one for all, and all for every one." Instead of bidding an eternal adieu to dear friends at the close of life, you will now say, "Good-by till I see you

again." Such are the results of the new revelation. It has come to fill the void which incredulity has deepened, to revive hope where it is withering into doubt and a perspective of nonentity, to give to every thing a reason for existing. Is this result, then, without importance because the spirits come not to solve scientific problems, and to give to the indolent the means of enriching themselves without trouble? However, the fruits which man ought to gather from it are not only those for a future life: he will extract good from the transformation that these new beliefs ought to work in his character, his tastes, his tendencies, and, in pursuance of which, upon his habits and social relations. In putting an end to egotism, pride, and incredulity, the way is paved for the blessing, which is the reign of God. Revelation has then for its object the giving to man certain truths which he is unable to acquire by himself alone, by which he may accelerate his progress in knowledge. These truths are generally kept within the limits of fundamental principles destined to put him in the way of research, and not to guide him by a leading-string. There are landmarks to show him the end in view. To him is allotted the task of studying and deducing from them their applications. Far from freeing him from labor, these are but new elements furnished for his activity.

## CHAPTER II.

### GOD. — EXISTENCE OF GOD. — THE DIVINE NATURE. — PROVIDENCE.

*Existence of God.* — God being the first cause of all things, the starting-point of all, the pivot upon which the edifice of creation reposes, is the subject to be considered before any other. It is by elementary principle that one judges a cause by its effect, when one sees not the cause. Science goes farther: it calculates the power of the cause by the power of the effect, and can even determine the nature of it. It is thus, for example, that astronomy has conceived of the existence of planets in ascertained regions in space, by the knowledge of laws which govern the heavenly bodies. Astronomers have sought for, and brought to the knowledge of men, planets that they can really say have been discovered before they have been seen. In an order of more common facts, if one is plunged in a thick fog, by the light diffused around, he judges that the sun is in the horizon, although he sees it not. If a bird cleaving the air receives a deadly shot, one judges that a ball, sent by a skilful hand, struck it, although one may not have seen the marksman. Is it then always necessary to have seen a thing before knowing that it exists?

In every thing it is by observing effects that we

arrive at the knowledge of causes. Another principle, also elementary, and passed into an axiom by force of truth, is, that all intelligent effect must have an intelligent cause. If one inquired who was the inventor of such an ingenious piece of mechanism, the architect of such a monument, the sculptor of such a statue, or the painter of such a picture, what would one think of him who should reply that it was done without the help of any one? When one sees a superior work of art or of industry, they say that that is probably the work of a man of genius, because it is evident that a high intelligence has presided at its conception. One judges, nevertheless, that a man has done it, because one knows that it is not above human capacity; but no one will say that it proceeded from the brain of an idiot or of an ignoramus, and still less that it is the work of an animal or the product of chance. Everywhere one recognizes the presence of man by his works. If you should enter an unknown country, even were it a desert, and you should discover the least vestige of human labor, you would conclude that men inhabit it, or have done so in the past. The existence of the antediluvians is proved not only by human fossils, but also, with as much certitude, by the presence, in the soil of this epoch, of utensils made by man. A fragment of a vase, a carved stone, a weapon, a brick, will suffice to attest their presence. By the rudeness or by the perfection of the work one will recognize the degree of intelligence or of advancement of those who have accomplished it. If, then, finding yourself in a country inhabited exclusively by barbarians or savages, you should discover a statue

worthy of Phidias, you would not hesitate to say, that, savages being incapable of having made it, it must be the work of an intelligence superior to theirs. In looking around one's self upon the works of nature, observing the foresight, the wisdom, the harmony, which preside in all things, one recognizes that there is a power superior to the highest flights of human intelligence, since the greatest genius of the earth would not know how to create a blade of grass. Since human intelligence cannot produce them, it proves that they are the product of an intelligence superior to that of humanity. This harmony and wisdom, extending from the grain of sand and the little worm to the innumerable stars which move in space, we judge to be the product of an infinite intelligence, unless we say that effects are without cause. To this some oppose the following argument: Works said to be produced by nature are the product of material forces, which are agitated mechanically by following the laws of attraction and repulsion. Particles of inert bodies are aggregated and disintegrated by the power of these laws. Plants are born, sprout, grow, and multiply always in the same manner, each one of its kind, by virtue of these same laws; each subject being like that from which it sprung. The growth, florescence, fructification, and coloring are subordinate to some material cause, such as heat, electricity, light, humidity, etc.

It is the same with animals. Even stars are formed by the attraction of particles, and move perpetually in their orbits by the effect of gravitation. This mechanical regularity in the employ of natural forces does not imply a free intelligence. Man moves his

arms when he desires and as he desires ; but he who would move them in the same manner from his birth to his death would be an automaton. Now, the organic forces of nature, considered as a whole, are, in some respects, automatic. All that is true ; but these forces are effects which must have a cause, and no one has pretended that they constitute divinity. They are material and mechanical ; they are not intelligent of themselves, we all know, but they are set at work, distributed, and appropriated to the needs of every thing by an intelligence which is not that of man. The useful appropriation of these forces is an intelligent effect, which denotes an intelligent cause. A clock moves with an automatic regularity, and it is this regularity which constitutes its merit. The force which makes it act is material, and not intelligent ; but what would this clock be if an intelligence had not combined, calculated, and distributed the employment of this force in order to make it move with precision ?

Because we cannot see intelligence, and because it is not in the mechanism of the clock, is it rational to conclude that it does not exist ? One judges it by its effects. The existence of the clock attests the existence of the clockmaker : the ingenuity of its mechanism is a proof of the intelligence and knowledge of its maker. When one sees one of these complicated clocks which mark the hour in the principal cities of the world, also the movement of the stars, which play airs, which seem, in a word, to speak to you in order to give you the knowledge of which you have need, has it ever occurred to any one to say, " There is a very intelligent clock " ? Thus it

is in the mechanism of the universe : God shows himself not, but he makes affirmation of himself in his works. The existence of God is, then, an acquired fact, not only by revelation, but by the material evidence of facts. The most barbarous people have not had a revelation ; yet they instinctively believe in a superhuman power. The savages themselves do not escape logical consequences : they see things which are beyond human power, and they conclude that they are produced by a being superior to humanity.

*The Divine Nature.* — It has not been permitted to man to sound the inmost nature of God. Rash would be the man who would pretend to raise the veil which screens him from our view. That understanding which is only acquired by perfect purity of mind is wanting in us as yet. But if we cannot penetrate to his essence, his existence being given as premises, we can, by the power of reason, arrive at the knowledge of his necessary attributes ; for, in seeing that which he cannot be without ceasing to be God, we judge by that what he must be. Without the knowledge of the attributes of God, it would be impossible to comprehend the work of creation. It is the starting-point of all religious beliefs ; and the fault of most religions is that they have made their dogmas the beacon-light to direct them. Those which have not attributed to God ALL power have made many gods ; those which have not endowed him with sovereign goodness have made of him a jealous, angry, partial, and vindictive God. God is supreme and sovereign intelligence.

The intelligence of man is limited, since it can neither make nor comprehend all that exists ; that of God, embracing infinity, must be infinite. God is

eternal; that is to say, he has had no beginning, and will have no end. If he had had a commencement, he must have sprung from nonentity. Now, nonentity, being nothing, can produce nothing; or, if he could have been created by *another* being anterior to himself, then this other being would be God. If one could suppose of him a commencement or an end, one would then be able to conceive a being having existed before him, or being able to exist after him, and thus one after the other even to infinitude. God is unchangeable. If he were subject to change, the laws which govern the universe would not have any stability. God is immaterial; that is to say, his nature differs from all that which we call matter: otherwise he could not be immutable, for he would be subject to the transformations of matter. God has not form appreciable to our senses: if he had, he would be matter. We say, the hand of God, the eye of God, the mouth of God, because men, knowing him only by themselves, take themselves as a term of comparison of all that which they comprehend not. Pictures representing God as an old man with a long beard, covered with a mantle, are ridiculous: they have the disadvantage of lowering the Supreme Being to the level of poor humanity. It is but one step from that to endow him with the passions of humanity, and to make of him a jealous and angry God. *God is all-powerful.* If he had not supreme power, one could conceive of a being more powerful; thus from one to another, till one could find a being that no other could surpass in power, and it is the latter who would be God. If not all-powerful, he could not have made all things;



and those which he would not have made would be the work of another God.

God is sovereignly just and good. Providential wisdom in divine laws is revealed in small as well as in great things, and this wisdom gives no room to doubt either his justice or his bounty. These two qualities comprise all the others. If one supposed them limited, if only on one point, one could conceive of a being who could possess them in a higher degree, and who would be superior. The infinitude of a quality excludes the possibility of a contrary one which would lessen or annul it. A being infinitely good could not have the smallest particle of wickedness; a being infinitely bad could not have the smallest portion of goodness,—just as an object could not be absolutely black with the faintest shade of white, neither one absolutely white with the slightest spot of black. God would not then be both good and bad; for, possessing neither one nor the other of these qualities in a supreme degree, he would not be God. All things would be submitted to caprice, and he would have stability in nothing. It is then only possible to be infinitely good or infinitely bad. If he were infinitely bad, he would do nothing good. Now, as his works testify of his wisdom, of his goodness, and of his solicitude for us, it is necessary to conclude, that, being unable to be at the same time good and bad without ceasing to be God, he must be infinitely good. Sovereign bounty and goodness imply sovereign justice; for if he acted unjustly or with partiality in one instance, or in respect to any one of his creatures, he would not be sovereignly just, and consequently not perfectly good. *God is*

*infinitely perfect.* It is impossible to conceive of a God without an infinitude of perfections, without which he could not be God; for one would always be able to think of a being possessing that which was wanting in him. In order that no one being may surpass him, it is necessary that he be infinite in all. The attributes of God, being infinite, are neither susceptible of augmentation nor of diminution. Without that they would not be infinite, and God would not be perfect. If one could take away the least part of one of his attributes, he would have no more God, since it would be possible for a more perfect being to exist. *God is unique.*

The unity of God is the result of absolute infinitude of perfection. Another God could not exist except upon one condition, that of being equally infinite in all things; for, if there were between them the slightest difference, the one would be inferior to the other, subordinate to his power, and would not be God. If there were between them absolute equality, there would be for all eternity one same thought, one wish, one power; thus confounding their identity, and there would be in reality only one God. If each one had special attributes, the one would do that which the other would not, and then there would not be between them perfect equality, since neither one nor the other would have sovereign authority. It is ignorance of the principle of the infinite perfection of God which has engendered polytheism, the worship of all people in early times. They attributed divinity to all power which seemed to them above humanity. Later, reason led them to join these diverse powers in one alone: then, as men have

gradually comprehended the essence of the divine attributes, they have taken away from their creeds the beliefs which denied them. After all, God cannot be God except on condition of not being surpassed in any thing by another being; for then the being who should surpass him in whatever it might be, were it only by a hair's breadth, would be the true God: for it is necessary that God be infinite in all things. It is thus that the existence of God being proved by his works, one arrives, by a simple logical deduction, to determine the attributes which characterize him. God is then the Supreme and Sovereign Intelligence. He is unique, eternal, immutable, immaterial, all-powerful, sovereignly just and good, infinite in all his perfection, like no other.

Such is the base upon which the universal edifice reposes. It is the beacon-light whose rays illumine the entire universe, and which alone can guide man in the search for truth. In following it he will never go astray; and, if he is often led astray, it is for want of having followed the route which was indicated to him. Such is the infallible criterion of all philosophical and religious doctrines. Man has a rigorously exact measure in the attributes of God with which to judge him; and he can say with certitude that all theory, all principle, all dogmas, all beliefs, all practices which are in contradiction to *any one* of these attributes, which should tend not necessarily to annul it, but simply to weaken it, cannot be of the truth. *In philosophy, in psychology, in ethics, in religion, there is no truth in that which departs one iota from the essential qualities of divinity.* Perfect religion must be that of which no article of faith is in

opposition with these qualities: all the dogmas must sustain the proof of this control without conflicting with it in any particular.

*Providence.*—Providence is the solicitude of God for all his creatures. God is everywhere. He sees all, he presides over all, even to the smallest things: in this, providential action consists. How can God, so grand, so powerful, so superior to all, interfere with the pettiest details, occupy himself with the most trifling thoughts and actions of each individual? Such is the question upon which unbelief alights, from which it concludes, that, in admitting the existence of God, his action should extend only to the general laws of the universe; that the universe operates to all eternity by virtue of these laws, to which every creature is subject in his sphere of activity without a need for the incessant co-operation of Providence. In their actual state of inferiority men can only with difficulty comprehend the infinite God, because they are themselves narrow and limited in their views of him. They imagine him to correspond to their ideas; they represent him as a circumscribed being, and make of him an image according to their ideal. Our pictures which paint him with human features contribute not a little to establishing this error in the mind of the masses, who adore him in form more than in thought. He is to the greater part of humanity a powerful sovereign upon an inaccessible throne, lost in the immensity of the heavens; and, because their faculties and perceptions are limited, they do not comprehend that God can, or deigns to, interfere directly in little things.

In his impotence how is man to comprehend the

essence even of divinity? He can form of it only an approximate idea by the aid of comparisons, necessarily very imperfect, but which can at least show him the possibility of that which at first sight seems to him impossible. Let us suppose a fluid subtle enough to penetrate all bodies: it is evident that every molecule of this fluid, coming in contact with every particle of matter, will produce upon the body an action identical with that which the whole fluid would produce. This is what chemistry demonstrates every day in limited proportions. This fluid, being without intelligence, acts mechanically by material force alone. But if we suppose this fluid to be endowed with intelligence, with sensitive and perceptive qualities, it will no more act blindly, but with discernment, will, and liberty: it will see, hear, and feel. The properties of the peri-spiritual fluid can give us only an idea of it. It is not intelligent of itself since it is matter; but it is the vehicle of the thought, the sensations, and perceptions of the spirit. It is by reason of the fineness of this fluid that spirits penetrate all space, that they read our inmost thoughts, that they see and act at a distance. It is to this fluid, which has attained a certain degree of purification, that the superior spirits owe the gift of comparative omnipresence. A ray of their thought directed to different points is sufficient to enable them to manifest their presence simultaneously with it. The extension of this faculty is subordinate to the degree of elevation and purification of the spirit. It is also by the aid of this fluid that man himself acts at a distance by the power of the will upon certain individuals; that he

modifies within certain limits the properties of matter, gives to inactive substances decided qualities, repairs organic disorders, and effects cures by the imposition of the hands. But the spirits, however elevated they may be, are creatures limited in their faculties, their power, and the extension of their perceptions, and cannot in this respect approach God. However, they can serve us as a point of comparison. That which the mind can accomplish only in a certain limit, God, who is infinite, performs in unlimited proportions.

There is still this difference, that the action of spirit is momentary and subordinate to circumstances; that of God is permanent. The thought of the spirit embraces only a circumscribed time and space; that of God, the universe and eternity. In a word, between the spirits and God there is the distance of the finite from the infinite. The peri-spiritual fluid is not the thought of the spirit, but the agent and intermediate of this thought. It is, in a manner, impregnated by the life of him who transmits it; and, in the impossibility of isolating it where we are, he seems to be one with the fluid, as sound and air seem to be one and the same in such a way that we can, as it were, materialize it. We say, for instance, the air is sonorous: we, in taking the effect for the cause, say that the fluid becomes intelligent. Let it be so or not with the thought of God, — that is to say, let it act directly, or by the intermedium of a fluid; for the facility of our intelligence, let us represent it under the concrete form of an intelligent fluid filling the infinite universe, penetrating all parts of creation, — *entire nature is plunged in the divine fluid*. Now, by

virtue of the principle that the parts of a whole are of the same nature, and have the same properties as the whole, each atom of this fluid, if one can express it thus, possessing thought, — that is to say, the essential attributes of divinity, this fluid being everywhere, — all is submissive to its intelligent action, to its foresight, to its solicitude, not a being, however inferior he may be, but who is in a measure penetrated by it.

We are thus constantly in the presence of divinity. Not one of our actions can escape his notice. Our thoughts are in incessant contact with his thoughts; and reason tells us that God reads the profoundest depths of our hearts. *We are in him, as he is in us*, according to the word of Christ. In order to exercise his watchful care over all his creatures, it is not necessary to look at them from the height of immensity. Our prayers, in order to be heard by him, have not to traverse space, nor to be spoken with a reverberating voice; for, being ever at our side, our thoughts are perceived by him. Our thoughts are like the tones of a bell, which make all the molecules of the ambient air vibrate. Far from us is the thought of materializing divinity. The image of an intelligent universal fluid is evidently only a comparison, but adapted to give a more just idea of God than the pictures which represent him with a human face. Its object is to make us comprehend the possibility of the presence of God everywhere, and of his occupying himself with every thing. We have always before our eyes an example which can give us an idea of the manner in which the action of God can be exercised over all beings, even to the inmost

recesses of their hearts, and, consequently, how the most subtle impressions of our soul reach him. It is drawn from spiritual teaching on this subject: "One of the attributes of divinity is infinitude. One cannot represent the Creator as having any limit, form, or boundary whatever. If he were not infinite, one could conceive of some one greater than he, who would be God. Being infinite, God is everywhere; for, if he were not everywhere, he would not be infinite. How can one combat this argument? Then, if there is a God, which no one should doubt, this God is infinite, and one can conceive of no space that he does not occupy. He is found, consequently, in contact with all his creations. He envelops them: they are in him. It is, then, comprehensible that he can be in direct rapport with every creature; and, in order to make you comprehend as clearly as possible in what manner this communication is always and universally taking place, let us examine that which passes between the spirit of man and his body. Man is a little world, of which the director is the spirit, and the principle directed is the body. In this universe the body will represent a creation whose spirit is God. [You comprehend that there can be here only a question of analogy, and not of identity.]

"The members of this body, the different organs which compose it, — its muscles, its nerves, its veins, its joints, — are so many material individualities localized in special parts of the body, if one can so speak. Although the number of these constitutive parts, so varied and different by nature, is considerable, it is not to be doubted, however, that he cannot move, that no action whatever can occur in any particular



part, without the consciousness of the spirit in regard to it. Are there diverse sensations in many places simultaneously, the spirit feels them all, discerns them, analyzes them, assigns to each its cause and place of action. A similar phenomenon takes place between creation and God. God is everywhere in nature, as the spirit pervades all the body. All the elements of creation are in constant rapport with him, as all the particles of the human body are in immediate contact with the spiritual being. There is, then, no reason why phenomena of the same order should not be produced in like manner in the one case as in the other. A member is agitated, the spirit feels it; a creature thinks, God knows it. All the members move, the different organs are put in vibration, the spirit feels every manifestation, distinguishes them, and localizes them. The different creations, different creatures, are agitated, think, act diversely, and God knows all that which passes, assigns to each one that which is peculiar to him. One can deduce from it equally the solidarity of matter and of intelligence, the solidarity between all beings of the world, that of all worlds, and, indeed, that of all creations of the Creator." — *Quintemont : Société de Paris*, 1867.

We comprehend the effect, which is much. From the effect we mount to the cause, and we judge of the cause by the grandeur of the effect; but its inmost essence escapes us, like that of the cause of a multitude of phenomena. We know the effects of electricity, of heat, of light, of gravitation; we form calculations in regard to them: however, we are ignorant of the inmost nature of the principle which

produces them. Is it, then, more rational to deny divine principle because we do not comprehend it? Nothing hinders us from admitting a principle of sovereign intelligence, a centre of action, a principal focus, beaming always, inundating the entire universe with its beams, like the sun with its light. But where is this focus? That is what no one can tell. It is probable that God is no more confined to a certain point than is his action, and that he traverses incessantly the regions of space without limit. If common spirits have the gift of ubiquity, this faculty in God must surely be unlimited. Admitting that God does fill the universe, one can suppose that this focus has no necessity for transporting itself, but that he appears at each point where sovereign will desires to be. From which we can infer that he is everywhere, but in no one place especially. Before these unfathomable problems we must feel our littleness. God exists: we cannot doubt it. He is infinitely just and good: this is his essence. His care extends itself to all: we comprehend it. He can then desire only our good: that is why we should have confidence in him. This is the essential part of it: for the rest, let us wait until we are worthy of understanding him.

*View of God.* — Since God is everywhere, why do we not see him? Upon leaving the earth, shall we see him? Such questions are daily proposed. The first is not difficult to solve. Our material organs have limited perceptions, which render them powerless to see certain things, sometimes even material objects. Thus certain fluids escape our view, as also that of our analytical instruments. However,

we do not doubt their existence. We see the effects of the pestilence; but we do not see the fluid which transports it. We see bodies move under the influence of the force of gravitation; but we do not see this force. The spiritual essence of things cannot be perceived by material organs: it is only by the spiritual vision that we can see spirits, and the substances of the immaterial world. Our soul alone can then have perception of God. Does it see him immediately after death? Communications from beyond the tomb can alone inform us. By them we learn that the privilege of seeing him is granted only to the purest souls, and thus very few possess the necessary degree of ethereality upon leaving their terrestrial envelope. Some common comparisons will make this the more easily comprehended. He who is in the depth of a valley surrounded by a thick fog does not see the sun; but at a higher point, by aid of the increased light, he judges that the sun is shining. If he climbs the mountain, in proportion as he rises the fog becomes thinner, the light more and more brilliant; but he does not as yet see the sun. When he commences to see it, it is as yet veiled; for the least vapor suffices to conceal its splendor. It is only after rising above the lowering mist, only in an atmosphere of perfect purity, that he sees it in all its brightness.

It is the same with him whose head is enveloped in many veils. At first he sees nothing at all. With every veil which is withdrawn, the light becomes more and more clear; but it is only when the last veil is taken away that he perceives clearly all things. It is still the same with a liquor charged with for-

eign substances. It becomes turbid at first. At every distillation its transparency is augmented, until, becoming completely purified, it acquires a perfect limpidity, and presents no obstacle to the sight. Thus it is with the soul. The peri-spiritual covering, although invisible and impalpable to us, who are still too gross for certain perceptions, is, in truth, a veritable substance. This covering becomes spiritualized itself in proportion as the soul becomes elevated by morality. The imperfections of the soul are like veils which obscure its light. Every imperfection when removed leaves one veil less; but it is only after becoming completely purified that it enjoys the full plenitude of its faculties. God, being pre-eminently the divine essence, can be perceived in all his splendor only by spirits who have arrived at the highest degree of ethereality.

If imperfect spirits do not see him, it is not that they are farther away from him than are others. They and all natural things are submerged in the divine fluid, as we are in the light, only their imperfections are veils which hide him from their sight. When the fog shall have disappeared, they will see him resplendently shine. To attain this vision, there will be no necessity for climbing, nor of seeking him in the depths of infinitude. The spiritual sight, being disembarassed of the moral taints which obscured it, they will see him in every place; for he is everywhere to be found. He must be as truly upon the earth as elsewhere, if he is everywhere. It takes time for the spirit to purify itself; and the different incarnations are the alembics in the depths of which is left each time some impurity. In quitting his mortal envelope

man is not instantaneously despoiled of his imperfections. That is the reason why some see no more of God after death than while living on earth ; but, in proportion as spirits become purified, they have a more distinct intuition. If they do not see God, they comprehend him better : the light is less vague. Thus, when spirits say that God forbids them to respond to this question, it is not that God appears to them, or speaks to them, in order to direct them to do, or prohibit them from doing, such and such things. No ; but they feel him : they receive the emanation of his thought, as we feel in respect to spirits who envelop us in their fluid, although we do not see them. No man can see God with fleshly eyes. If this favor were accorded any one, it would only be in that trance state when the soul is as much redeemed from the trammels of matter as is possible during incarnation. Such a privilege would only be accorded to advanced souls incarnated for a mission here, and not in expiation for sin.

But, as spirits of the most elevated or dershine with a dazzling splendor, it is possible that spirits less elevated, embodied or disembodied, struck with the splendor which surrounds them, have believed that they have seen God himself, as one sees sometimes a minister taken for his sovereign. Under what appearance does God present himself to those who are rendered worthy of such a favor ? Is it under any form, — as a human figure, or as a focus of beaming light ? This is something that human language is powerless to describe, because there exists no point of comparison which can give an idea of it. We are like blind men whom men seek in vain to instruct

concerning the appearance of the light of the sun. Our vocabulary of knowledge is limited to our needs, and to the circle of our ideas. Just as that of the savage could not possibly depict the marvels of civilization, so that of people of the highest culture is too poor to describe the splendors of the heavens, our intelligence too limited to comprehend them, while our too feeble sight would be dazzled by their brightness could we see them as they are.

### CHAPTER III.

GOOD AND EVIL.—SOURCE OF GOOD AND EVIL.—  
INSTINCT AND INTELLIGENCE.—DESTRUCTION OF  
LIVING BEINGS BY ONE ANOTHER.

*Source of Goodness and Wickedness.*—God being the origin of all things, and his nature being all wisdom, justice, and goodness, all which proceeds from him must be imbued with these attributes; for that which is infinitely wise, just, and good, can produce nothing unreasonable, wicked, or wrong. The wickedness which we observe cannot then be derived from him. If wickedness was the province of a special being who is called Satan, he must be either equal to God, and for all eternity as powerful, or he must be his inferior. In the first case, there would be two rival powers in constant contention, each one seeking to overthrow the work of the other, and constantly thwarting each other. This hypothesis is irreconcilable with that unity of purpose which reveals itself in the arrangement of the universe.

In the second case this being, being inferior to God, would be subordinate to him. Not being able to exist for all eternity like him, without being his equal, he would have had a commencement. If he has been created, God must have been his creator. Thus God would have created a bad spirit, which is impossible if he be infinite goodness. According to

GENESIS:

THE MIRACLES AND THE PREDICTIONS

*ACCORDING TO SPIRITISM.*

BY

ALLAN KARDEC,  
AUTHOR OF "THE SPIRITS' BOOK," "BOOK ON MEDIUMS," AND  
"HEAVEN AND HELL."

*TRANSLATED BY THE SPIRIT-GUIDES OF*

W. J. COLVILLE.

The spiritual doctrine is the result of the collective and concordant teachings of spirits.

Science is called in to make the statements in Genesis agree with the laws of nature.

God proves his greatness and power by the immutability of his laws, and not by their suspension.

For God the past and the future are the present.

BOSTON:  
COLBY & RICH, PUBLISHERS.

1883.



E. F.  
12 12  
R. 22

FRANKLIN PRESS:  
RAND, AVERY, AND COMPANY,  
BOSTON.

## PREFACE TO ENGLISH EDITION.

---

IN offering an English translation of this wonderful work — Allan Kardec's masterpiece — to the English-speaking public, the translator feels considerable embarrassment, knowing how very imperfectly the work has been accomplished. Nevertheless, despite many deficiencies in beauty of style and accuracy of expression, the public are assured that the original ideas of the author have been preserved in all their integrity; only the charming polish so distinguishable in the best French literature has been lost.

Possessing myself but the most meagre acquaintance with the French language, the task of translating so large and valuable a work out of that tongue would have been utterly beyond me, had it not been for the constant and inestimable assistance I have received from the spirits, who originally gave the philosophy to the world when Allan Kardec was yet in material form among us. These intelligences and Allan Kardec himself have frequently made their presence known to me, compelling me to materially change many passages that nothing might be sent out to the world of a misleading nature. The thought is, I am convinced, throughout the volume, true to the author's

original conception ; but that the language is in many parts crude and sadly defective, no one can realize more deeply than myself.

While acknowledging my indebtedness to invisible helpers, I must not refrain from expressing my most sincere thanks to a lady in Boston, whose wide acquaintance with the French tongue renders her an authority on all matters of translation, who has, from pure love of the glorious truths of the spiritual philosophy and a desire to disseminate these truths far and wide, given a vast amount of her valuable time to assisting me in the arduous and yet most delightful task of preparing this volume for the press. It is now sent forth in confident assurance that it contains facts relative to the soul and its unfoldments destined to work a complete revolution in the thought of the age.

While many may disagree with the author's conclusions, none can deny the force of his arguments ; nor can any man or woman, capable of appreciating real nobility of character, fail to admire the sublimity of a mind devoting itself through the best years of an earthly life to intercourse with the spirit-world, and to the publication of revolutionary literature without any reward other than the satisfaction of seizing truth, and disseminating it freely among the hungry multitudes.

Allan Kardec was a man almost without a peer in self-devotion to the good of the race in the city and country where he lived. He has gone to his rest and his reward, and verily his works do follow him. That this humble effort to spread the truth he lived only to proclaim may assist some minds in their attempts to solve life's greatest

problems, and that the exalted teachers in the higher life, who have used the translator as an amanuensis for the presentation of their thoughts in a new dress, may go with all who shall read this volume, is the earnest hope and desire of those spirits' willing instrument,

W. J. COLVILLE.

Boston, April, 1883.



## INTRODUCTION.

---

THIS new work is one step more in advance in the effects and applications of Spiritism. As its title indicates, its object is the study of three points diversely commented upon and interpreted even to this day, — “Genesis, Miracles, and Prophecies ” in their relations with the recently known laws which are revealed through the observation of spiritual phenomena. Two elements, or we may say two forces, govern the universe, — the one the spiritual, the other the material, element. By the simultaneous action of these two principles are developed some special phenomena, which are naturally rendered inexplicable if one abstracts either of them, just as the formation of water would be inexplicable if one should take away one of its two constituent elements, oxygen and hydrogen. Spiritism, in demonstrating the existence of the spiritual world and its relations with the material world, furnishes the key to a multitude of unknown phenomena, which are considered as inadmissible by a certain class of thinkers. The record of such facts abounds in the Scriptures ; and it is in default of knowledge concerning the laws that govern them that commentators of the two opposing parties, moving always in the same circle of ideas, — some abstracting

positive gifts from science, others from the spiritual principle, — have not been able to arrive at any rational solution.

The solution is found only in the reciprocal action of spirit and matter. It takes away, it is true, the greater part of the supernatural character of these facts. But which is the more valuable method, — to admit them as springing from the laws of nature, or to reject them entirely? Their absolute rejection removes the base from the edifice; while their admission as facts, suppressing only accessories, leaves the base intact. This is why Spiritism leads so many people to a belief in truths which they formerly considered Utopian ideas. This work is then, as we have said before, a complement of the applications of Spiritism to this point of special view. The materials were ready, or at least elaborated, a long time since; but the moment for their publication had not arrived. It was necessary at first that the ideas which were to form the base should arrive at maturity; and, moreover, it was necessary to take advantage of circumstances.

Spiritism has neither mysteries nor secret theories. It can bear the full light of day so that every one can judge of it by a knowledge of its laws; but every thing must come in its own time in order to win its way. A solution given lightly, prior to the complete elucidation of the question, would be a retarding force, rather than a means of advancement. In the matter in question the importance of the subject makes it a duty to avoid all precipitation.

Before entering into the subject, it has appeared neces-

sary to us to define distinctly the respective rôles of spirits and men according to the new doctrine. These preliminary considerations, which discard all ideas of mysticism, form the subject of the first chapter, entitled "Character of the Spiritual Revelation." We call serious attention to this point, because it is in a measure the knot of the question. Notwithstanding the work incumbent upon human activity in the elaboration of this doctrine, the initiative belongs to the spirits; but conclusions are drawn from the personal opinion of no one of them. The truth can only be *the resultant of their collective and concordant teachings*. Without this united testimony, a doctrine could not lawfully be called the doctrine of the spirits: it would be merely that of one spirit, and would possess only the value of a personal opinion. General concordance in teaching is the essential character of the doctrine, the condition even of its existence. It is evident that all principles which have not received the consecration of general agreement can only be considered as a fractional part of this same doctrine, merely as a simple, isolated opinion for which Spiritism cannot assume the responsibility. It is the concordant, collective teaching of the spirits who have passed beyond, which constitutes the logical criterion, and which gives strength to the spiritual doctrine, assuring to it perpetuity. In order to change it, it would be necessary that the universal experience and teachings of spirits should change, and the day come when they would contradict what they have previously declared. Since it has its source in the teachings of the spirits, to cause it to fail would necessitate a cessation in the exist-



ence of the spirits. Thus established, it must prevail over every personal system which has not, like it, roots extending in all directions. "The Book of Spirits" has seen its credit consolidate, because it is the expression of a general collective thought. In the month of April, 1867, it accomplished its first decennial period. In this interval, the fundamental principles which form its base have been successively completed and developed by following progressive teachings of the spirits; but not one of its declarations has received contradiction through the trial. All without exception have remained firm, stronger than ever; while, among all the contradictory ideas with which persons have tried to oppose them, not one has prevailed, because on all sides the spiritual teaching was confirmatory. This characteristic result we can proclaim without vanity, as its merit is not attributable to us. Similar circumstances have presided at the editing of our other works. Thus we have been able in all truth to tell the public that they are in accordance with Spiritism itself, owing to their conformity with the general teachings of the spirits. In this volume we can present under similar conditions the complement of the precedents, with the exception, however, of some theories yet hypothetical, which we have taken care to indicate as such, and which ought not to be considered as other than individual opinions until they have been confirmed. If they be contradicted, the responsibility of them does not rest upon the general doctrine. Yet the constant readers of the "Revue"<sup>1</sup> will have observed that most of the ideas only

<sup>1</sup> *Revue Spirite*, a valuable French spiritist periodical.

outlined in preceding articles are enlarged upon and developed in this last work. The “Revue” is often for us a trial-ground, destined to sound the opinions of men and spirits upon certain principles, before admitting them as constituent parts of the doctrine.



one doctrine, the evil spirit, created good, became evil; and God, in order to punish him, condemned him to remain forever in a state of wickedness, with permission to seduce men from the right path, and lead them into an evil one. By one downward step they merited the most cruel eternal punishment, without hope of pardon. In this supposed divine infliction there would have been more than a failure in goodness: it would exhibit premeditated cruelty; for, in order to render seduction more easy and better to conceal the snare, Satan would be authorized to transform himself into an angel of light, and to simulate the works of God so far as to be mistaken for him by many. There would be, moreover, iniquity and improvidence on the part of God; for all liberty being given to Satan to go away from the empire of darkness, and deliver himself to mundane pleasures, in order to tempt men thereby, the instigator to wickedness would be less punished than the victims of his plots, who should fall through weakness, since once in the abyss the latter could never more escape from it, God refusing them even a glass of water to quench their thirst; and during all eternity he and his angels hear their groanings without being moved thereby, whilst he leaves Satan to take all the enjoyment that he desires.

Of all doctrines upon the theory of evil, this is, without exception, the most irrational and the most destructive of all ideas of divinity. ("See Heaven and Hell, according to Spiritism," chap. x., "The Demons.") However, evil exists, and it has a cause. Evil is of many kinds. There are, firstly, physical and moral evils; then the evils that men can evade,

and those which are independent of human will. Among the latter are classed natural plagues. Man, whose faculties are limited, cannot compass or understand all the designs of the Creator. He studies things at the point of view of his personality by artificial interests, and by conditions that he has created, and which are not in the order of nature. That is why he finds oftentimes wrong and injustice in that which he would know to be just and admirable if he could see its cause, its end, and definite results. In seeking the reason for being and utility of every thing, he will surely discover that all bears the imprint of infinite wisdom, and he will bow before this wise power even in things which he fails to comprehend.

Man has received a share of intelligence by which he can avert, or at least greatly palliate, the effects of all natural plagues. The more knowledge he acquires, the farther he advances in civilization, the less disastrous these plagues will be. With a wisely provident social organization he will be able to neutralize the consequences of them, and in time evade them entirely. Thus for these plagues which annoy us now, but which have their use in the general order of nature, God has given to man, in the faculties by which he has endowed his mind, the means of paralyzing their effects in the future. It is thus that he renders healthy insalubrious countries; that he destroys pestilential miasmata; that he fertilizes waste lands, and taxes his ingenuity to preserve them from inundation; that he constructs healthier habitations, stronger to resist winds so necessary to purification of the atmosphere; that he is sheltered from the inclemency of the weather. It is thus that neces-

sity has created science by the aid of which he ameliorates the condition of the habitable parts of the globe, and augments the general well-being. The evils to which men are exposed by ignorance are a stimulant for the exercise of their intelligence, for all their moral and physical faculties, by inducing them to seek for means to shelter themselves from them. If man had nothing to fear, no necessity would incline him to seek for any thing better: he would become benumbed in the inactivity of his mind; he would invent nothing and discover nothing. Pain and suffering are the incentives which spur men onward in the march of progress. But the most numerous evils are those which men create by their own vices, — those which spring from their pride, from their egotism, from their ambition, from their cupidity, from their excess in all things. They carry in their train wars, calamities, dissensions, injustice, oppression of the feeble by the strong, and induce the greater part of diseases. God has established laws full of wisdom, which are only for the good of men. All that is necessary to man's welfare is his obedience to them. His way is traced out for him by his conscience. The divine law is graven upon his heart. Moreover, God reminds him incessantly by his messiahs and prophets, by all embodied spirits who have received the mission of enlightening him, of moralizing him, of ameliorating his condition, and in these latter days by the multitude of disembodied spirits who manifest on all sides, — *if man conformed himself rigorously to the divine laws, he would evade, without doubt, the severest evils, and would live happily upon the earth.*

If he does not obey them, it is by virtue of his free will; and he must submit himself to the consequences. But God, full of goodness, has placed the remedy by the side of evil; that is to say, he brings good out of its opposite. There comes a time where an excess of moral wickedness becomes intolerable, and makes man realize the need of a change of life. Instructed by experience, he is impelled to seek a remedy in goodness, always by the effect of his free will. When he enters the better path, it is by the influence of his own desire, and because he recognizes the inconveniences of the other way. This necessity is a compulsion to improve himself morally, in view of being happier. This brings with it the natural consequence of bettering his material condition also. One can say, *that evil is the absence of good*, as cold is the absence of heat.

Wickedness is no more a distinct attribute than cold is a special fluid. One is the negative of the other. Where good exists not, there is necessarily evil. Not to do wickedly is already the commencement of good. God desires only good: from man only comes evil. If there were in the universe a being charged with evil, man would not be able to evade him; but man, having the cause of wrong-doing within himself, having at the same time his free will, and for his guide the divine laws, he can avoid it if he desires to do so. Let us take a common fact as a comparison. A land-owner knows that at the extremity of his field is a dangerous place, and that those who might venture there would be wounded, or perish. What means does he employ to prevent accidents? He places near the place a notice for-

bidding people to pass there on account of danger. Such is the law: it is wise and provident. If, notwithstanding the warning, an imprudent person pays no heed, and passes beyond it, thereby injuring himself, whom can he blame if not himself? Thus is it with all evils: man could evade them if he would obey the divine laws. God, for example, has placed a limit to the gratification of wants: man is warned by satiety. If he passes beyond this limit, he does it voluntarily. The illness, infirmities, and death, which may be the consequence of it, are then occasioned by his fault, and not that of God.

Wickedness being the result of the imperfections of man, and man being created by God, will they not say that God has at least created, if not evil, the cause of evil? If he had made man perfect, evil would not exist. If man had been created perfect, he would be carried by fate in the way of goodness. Now, by virtue of his free will, he is carried by fate neither to the good nor bad; God having decreed that he should submit to the law of progress, and that this progress should be the fruit of his own labor, in order that he should have the merit of it, as well as be responsible for his evil deeds, which he can always avoid by the use of his will. The question, then, is to know what is in man the source of propensity to evil. If one studies all the passions, and even all vices, one sees that they have their origin in the instinct of self-preservation. This instinct is strongest with animals, and with primitive men, who approached nearest the animal existence. It governed them entirely, because they had not the moral sense for a counterpoise, having not been born into the



intellectual life. The instinct is weakened in proportion as intelligence is developed, because the latter rules matter.

With reason and knowledge is born freedom of will, which man employs to his liking. Then alone commences his responsibility for his acts. The spirit is destined for the spiritual life: but in the first phases of its corporeal existence it has only material needs to satisfy; and to this end the exercise of the passions is a necessity for the preservation of the species and of the individual, materially speaking. But, passed beyond this period, he has other needs, — needs at first partly moral and partly material, then exclusively moral. It is then that the spirit rules matter. If he throws off the yoke, he advances on his providential way; he approaches his final destiny. If, on the contrary, he allows himself to be ruled by the senses, he is retarded on his upward progress by assimilating himself with the brute. In this situation *that which was formerly good, because it was a necessity of his nature, becomes an evil, not only because it is no more a necessity, but because it has become hurtful to his spiritual well-being.* Evil is thus relative, and the responsibility therefor proportionate to the degree of advancement. All passions have thus their providential utility: if not so, God has made some things intrinsically useless and hurtful. It is only abuse which constitutes the evil, and man abuses by virtue of his free will. At length, awakened to the knowledge of his own share in it, he chooses freely between the good and the bad.

*Instinct and Intelligence.* — What is the difference between instinct and intelligence? Where does one

end, and the other commence? Is instinct a rudimentary intelligence or a distinct faculty, — an exclusive attribute of matter? Instinct is occult force, which incites organic beings to spontaneous and involuntary acts in relation to their conservation. In instinctive acts there is neither reflection, contrivance, or premeditation. Thus the plant seeks air, turns itself towards the light, directs its roots towards water and the nutritious earth; the flower opens and closes its petals by turns, according to its needs; climbing-plants wind themselves around supporters, or cling to them by their tendrils. It is by instinct animals are apprised of that which is useful or injurious to them; that they are directed, according to the season, towards propitious climates; that they construct, without preliminary lessons, with more or less art, according to species, soft places of rest and of shelter for their progeny, machinery by which they snare their prey by which they are nourished; that they handle dexterously weapons of defence with which they are provided; that the sexes are brought together; that the mother broods over her little ones, and that the latter seek the breast of the mother. With man instinct rules at the outset of life. It is by instinct the infant makes his first movements, that he seizes his nourishment, that he cries to express his wants, that he imitates the sound of the voice, that he tries to speak and to walk. With the adult, even, certain acts are instinctive: such are spontaneous movements to escape a danger, to remove one's self from peril, to maintain one's equilibrium; such are, also, the winking of the eyelids to temper the brilliancy of the light, the mechanical opening

of the mouth to breathe. Intelligence is revealed by voluntary, reflective, premeditated, united actions, according to the fitness of circumstances. It is incontestably an exclusive attribute of the soul.

All mechanical action is instinctive: that which denotes reflection and contrivance is intelligent. One is free; the other is not. Instinct is a sure guide, which never deceives; intelligence, solely because it is unrestrained, is sometimes subject to error. If the instinctive action has not the character of the intelligent one, it reveals, nevertheless, an intelligent cause essentially provident. If one admits that instinct has its source in matter, it is necessary, also, to admit that matter is intelligent, — surely wiser and more foreseeing than soul, since instinct does not deceive, whilst intelligence does. If one considers instinct to be rudimental intelligence, why is it, in certain cases, superior to reasoning intelligence, — that it makes possible the execution of things that the latter cannot produce? If it is the attribute of a special spiritual principle, what becomes of this principle? When instinct is effaced, this principle must also be destroyed. If animals are only endowed with instinct, their future is without issue; their sufferings have no compensation. This would be in conformity with neither the justice nor goodness of God. According to another system, instinct and intelligence have one and the same principle alone. Having arrived at a certain degree of development, this principle, which at first had only the qualities of instinct, is subjected to a transformation which imparts to it free intelligence. In a word, it receives that which is termed the divine spark of knowledge.

This change is never sudden, but gradual, — of such a kind that during a certain period there must be a mingling of the two aptitudes, the first diminishing according as the other is augmented. Yet a last hypothesis, which, however, is perfectly allied to unity of principle, springs from the essentially provident character of instinct, and agrees with that which Spiritism teaches us concerning the connection between the spiritual and corporal world.

One knows now that disembodied spirits have the mission of watching over incarnated ones, of whom they are the guides and protectors; that they surround them with their liquid effluvia; that man acts often in an unconscious manner under the influence of these effluvia. One knows, beside, that instinct itself, which produces actions without the aid of reason, predominates in children, and in general with those persons whose intellect is feeble. Now, according to this hypothesis, instinct can neither be an attribute of the soul nor of matter. It does not belong properly to any living being, but must be the effect of the direct action of invisible protectors, who supply the deficiency to imperfect intelligence by inciting them to necessarily unconscious actions for the preservation of life. It is like the leading-string by which one supports the infant learning to walk; and, in the same manner as one discontinues gradually the use of the string in order that he may learn to stand without help, the spirit-protectors leave their *protégés* to themselves when the latter can be guided by their own intelligence. Thus instinct, far from being the product of a rudimental and imperfect intelligence, is ever the result of an unknown power

in the plenitude of its strength supplying knowledge to a feebler understanding, impressing the latter to act unconsciously for his own good in a way impossible to him were it not for this impression; or it may be that a being of riper information, becoming temporarily trammelled in the use of his powers, is ministered unto by this same wonderful power, — the first takes place with man in his infancy, the second in cases of idiocy and mental affections. It has passed into a proverb that there is a God for children, fools, and drunkards; for children, fools, and drunkards are always kept from harm. This belief is truer than one would think. This God is none other than the spirit-protector who watches over the one incapable of protecting himself by his own reason. In this set of ideas one must go still farther; for this theory, however rational it may be, does not solve all the difficulties of the question.

In order to find the causes, it is necessary to study the effects; and by the nature of the effects one can judge of the nature of the cause. If one observes the effects of instinct, one remarks, in the first place, a unity of view, and, as a whole, a certainty of results which exists no more when instinct is displaced by free intelligence. Moreover, in the appropriation of instinctive faculties, so certain and so constant to the needs of every creature, one recognizes a profound wisdom. This unity of sight could not exist without a unity of thought; and, consequently, by the multiplicity of acting causes, or by following the progress which is always accomplished by individual intelligences, there is between them a

diversity of operation and of will wholly incompatible with this so perfectly harmonious a unity, produced since the beginning of time, and in all places, with a regularity and mathematical precision never at fault. This uniformity in the result of instinctive faculties is a fact which forcibly implies unity of cause. If this cause were inherent in every individuality, there would be as many varieties of instincts as of individuals, from the plant to man. A general uniform and constant effect must have a general uniform cause. An effect revealing wisdom and providence must result from a wise and provident cause. A wise and provident cause, being necessarily intelligent, cannot be exclusively material; and as we find not in created beings, embodied or disembodied, the necessary qualities to produce such a result, it is necessary to go higher, — that is, to the Creator himself. The reader is referred to the explanation given of the means whereby one can conceive of providential action (chap. II.).

If one imagines to himself all beings permeated with the divine effluence severally intelligent, he will comprehend the provident wisdom and unity of sight which presides in all the instinctive movements conducing to the good of each individual. This solicitude is so much the more active as the individual has fewer resources within himself, due to his possession of intelligence. This is why it shows itself in a greater and more absolute degree in animals than in men. In the light of this theory one understands that instinct is always a sure guide, the maternal instinct, the noblest of all; that which materialism lowers to the level of attractive forces of

matter, finds itself re-enthroned and ennobled. Reason readily perceives that it is not desirable that it should be delivered over to the capricious action of that intelligence known as free will.

Through the maternal organism God himself watches over his newly born creatures. This theory, however, does not destroy the *rôle* of the spirit-protectors, whose concurrence is a fact proved by experience; but it is necessary to remark, that the action of the latter is essentially individual, that it is modified by the qualities proper to the protector and his charge, and that it never has the uniformity and generality of instinct. God, in his wisdom, himself conducts the blind; but he leaves to free intelligence the work of guiding clear-seeing ones, that each may be responsible for his own acts. The mission of the spirit-protector is a duty voluntarily accepted, and which is for the guardian spirits a means of advancement according to the manner in which they fulfil it. All these analyses of instinct are necessarily hypothetical, and no one of them is sufficiently authentic in character to be given as a definite solution. The question will certainly be solved some day, when man will have attained to a power of observation revealing truths yet beyond our grasp. Until then it is necessary to submit these diverse opinions to the crucible of reason and logic, and wait until more light breaks. The solution which approaches the nearest to the truth will be necessarily that which harmonizes the best with the attributes of God; that is to say, to sovereign goodness and justice (see chap. II., p. 24), instinct being an unerring guide. When spirits resort to outward intel-

ligence in the primary periods of their development, they are confounded sometimes by effects, and, above all, by the human language, which does not always lend itself with sufficient amplitude to all the varying shades of thought.

There is, however, between these two principles a difference which it is necessary to consider. Instinct is a sure guide, and always a good one. At a given time it may become useless, but never hurtful. It is weakened by the predominance of intelligence. The passions in the first expressions of the soul have this in common with instinct, that they are guided by an equally involuntary force. They are born more particularly to supply the needs of the body, and depend more than instinct upon the organism. That which distinguishes them above all else from instinct is that they are individual, and do not produce, as does instinct, general and uniform effects. We see them, on the contrary, varied in intensity of nature according to individual development. They are useful as stimulants; that is, until the awakening of the moral sense, which, in the case of a passive being, transforms him into a rational being. From this moment they become not only useless, but hurtful, to the development of the spirit, whose upward progress they retard: they are weakened by the development of reason.

The man who would constantly act instinctively might be very good, but would let his intelligence sleep. He would be like the child who would not quit his leading-strings, refusing to use his limbs. He who masters not his passions can be very intelligent, but at the same time very impure. Instinct



annihilates itself: the passions are governed only by the effort of the will. All men have passed through the crucible of the passions. Those who are troubled by them no more, who are by nature neither proud, ambitious, egotistical, vindictive, cruel, choleric, sensual, who do good without effort, without premeditation, — that is to say, involuntarily, — are they who have progressed through a succession of anterior existences: they are purged of the dross. It is wrong to say that they are less meritorious in doing good than those who are yet battling with their earthly tendencies. For them victory is accomplished; for the others it has not yet been achieved, and, when it is, they will be like these others. In their turn they will do good without effort, like children who read fluently without being obliged to spell the words. They are like two invalids, — the one of whom is cured, and full of strength; while the other is yet only convalescent, and walks with uncertain footing. They are indeed like two runners, of whom one is nearer the goal than the other.

*The Destruction of Living Beings by One Another.*  
— The reciprocal destruction of living beings by one another is a law of nature which, at first sight, seems in no way reconcilable with the goodness of God. One asks why he has made it necessary for them to nourish themselves by destroying each other. For him who sees things only in a material light, whose vision is limited to the present life, this appears indeed an imperfection in the divine plan. This conclusion is drawn by some, that God being imperfect is no more God. It is because they judge of divine perfection from their point of view. Their own judgment is their

measure of his wisdom, and they think that God does not know as well as themselves. Their short-sightedness not permitting them to judge of the whole, they do not comprehend how a real good can result from an apparent evil. The knowledge of the spiritual principle, considered in its veritable essence and by the grand law of unity which constitutes the full harmony of the universe, can alone give to man the key to this mystery, and show to him the providential wisdom and harmony precisely where he saw only an anomaly and contradiction. It is of this truth as of a crowd of others. Man is capable of sounding certain depths only when his spirit has arrived at a sufficient degree of maturity. The true life, of the animal as well as of man, is no more in the body than it is in the clothing: it is in the intelligent principle that pre-exists and survives the body. This principle has need of a body in order to develop itself by the work of controlling brute matter. The body is employed in this work: but the spirit is not thereby injured; on the contrary, it comes out of the strife every time stronger, more lucid, and more capable. What matters it that the spirit changes more or less frequently its envelope? It is no less a spirit. It is absolutely as though a man should renew his habiliments a hundred times a year: he would still be the same man. By the constant spectacle of destruction, God teaches men of how little worth is the material envelope, and excites in them the idea of the spiritual life by making them desire it as a compensation. But some will say, Could not God arrive at the same result by other means, without obliging living beings to destroy each other?

Very bold must he be who would pretend to penetrate the designs of the Infinite. If all is wisdom in his works, we ought to suppose that his wisdom is no more defective in this particular than in any other. If we cannot comprehend it, it is necessary to ascribe the seeming folly to our lack of advancement. Each time we can try to seek the reason by taking this for our watchword: *God must be infinitely just and wise.* Let us, then, seek for his justice and wisdom in all things, and let us bow before that which surpasses our understanding.

The first reason which presents itself for this destruction — a purely physical utility, it is true — is this: organic bodies are supported only by the aid of organic matter, this matter containing alone the nutritive elements necessary to their sustentation. The bodies, which are instruments of action for the intelligent principle, having need of incessant renovation, Providence makes them serve for their mutual support. That is why beings are nourished by one another. It is thus that body is nourished by body: but the spirit is not changed; it is only despoiled of its envelope. This is outside of moral considerations of a more elevated order. The battle is necessary to the development of the spirit. It is in battle that it exercises its faculties.

He who attacks another that he may nourish himself, and he who defends himself to preserve his life, making an assault upon intelligence, thereby augments his own intellectual strength. As he must contend against stratagem, displaying intelligence, thereby both augment their intellectual force. One of the two succumbs. But what is it that the stronger

or more adroit has in reality taken away from the feeble? His vestment of flesh, — nothing else. The spirit, which is not dead, will take another body. With inferior beings in creation, with those in whom the moral sense does not exist, where instinct has not been replaced by intelligence, the struggle would have for incentive only the satisfaction of a material necessity. Now, one of the most imperious physical needs is that of food. They struggle, then, only to sustain life; that is to say, to seize prey, or to defend themselves from attack: for they cannot be actuated by a more elevated object. It is in this first period that the soul is elaborated and tried by the vicissitudes of life.

When it has attained the degree of maturity necessary for its transformation, it receives from God new faculties, — free will and moral sense; in a word, the divine spark which gives a new course to ideas, endowing spirits with new aptitudes and new perceptions. But the new moral faculties are only developed gradually; for there is nothing abrupt in nature. There is a period of transition where man is scarcely distinguishable from the brute. In the first periods of his existence animal instincts rule; and the battle has still for its incentive the satisfaction of material wants. Later, the animal instinct and moral sentiment are counterbalanced. Then struggles are no more for nourishment, but for the satisfaction of ambition, pride, and love of dominion; and it is necessary to destroy these also. But, accordingly as the moral sense gains ascendancy, moral sensibility becomes developed: the desire to destroy diminishes; at length it becomes effaced and odious to him.

Man has a horror of blood. However, a struggle is always necessary to the development of the spirit. After having arrived at a point which appears to us the culminating one, he is far from perfect. It is only at the price of activity he acquires knowledge by experience, and as he is despoiled of the last vestiges of animality; but then the effort, no longer brutal and bloody as it formerly was, becomes purely intellectual. Man struggles against difficulties, but no more with beings of his own species.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This question is attached to the no less grave one of the connection between animals and humanity, which will be treated later on. We have only sought to demonstrate by this explanation, that the destruction of living beings by one another detracts nothing from divine wisdom, and that all this is necessary in the grand chain of nature's laws. This chain is necessarily broken if one abstracts from it the spiritual principle. This is why so many questions are insolvable if one considers them materially, or from a material stand-point.

## CHAPTER IV.

### THE SCIENTIFIC NOTE IN GENESIS.

THE history of the origin of nearly all ancient nations is mingled with that of their religion: that is why their first books have been religious works; and as all religions are allied to the spirit of things, which is allied to that of humanity, they have founded upon the arrangement and formation of the universe explanations limited by the knowledge of the times, and the founders of their systems. The result is, that the first religious books have been the first scientific treatises, as they have also been the only code of civil laws. Religion was then a powerful rein in government. The people bent willingly under the invisible power by the name of which they were subjugated, and from whom the government was said to have received and to hold its power. If they would not obey their equals, they would bend to this power.

In order to give greater force to religion, it was necessary to present it as absolute, infallible, and immutable, without which it would have lost its ascendancy over beings well-nigh brutal and scarcely endowed with reason. It was not necessary that it should be discussed, any more than were the orders of a sovereign. With this condition of the human mind, the principle of blind belief and passive obedience

had its origin and utility. The veneration they had for sacred books, nearly always looked upon as revelations from heaven or as inspired by divinity, forbade all criticism. In primitive times, means of observation being very imperfect, the first theories upon the system of the universe were stained with grave errors ; but, if opportunities for investigation had been as complete as they are to-day, men would not have known how to take advantage of them. They could only be the fruit of successive developments, and repeated studies of the laws of nature. By measure, as man has advanced in the knowledge of these laws, he has penetrated the mysteries of nature, and rectified ideas which he had conceived concerning the origin of things. It is the same as learning and defining the correlative movements of the hands of a clock. It is necessary to know the laws controlling its mechanism ; that is, to appreciate the nature of its works, and calculate the power of its agitating forces. To comprehend the mechanism it is necessary to be familiar with all the laws which set in motion the complex whole.

Man has been impotent to solve the problem of creation until science has given him the key to it. It has been necessary that astronomy should open the doors of boundless space, and permit him to gaze into its infinite depths, that by the power of calculation he could determine with rigorous precision the movement, the position, the volume, the nature, and the *rôle* of the celestial bodies ; that natural philosophy should reveal to him the laws of gravitation, of heat, of light, and of electricity, the power of these agents over entire nature, and the cause of the innu-

merable phenomena which result from it; that chemistry should teach of the transformations of metal, and mineralogy of the materials which form the surface of the globe; that geology should teach man to read in terrestrial beds the gradual formation of this same globe; and that botany, zoölogy, paleontology, anthropology, should come to initiate him into the science of the affiliation and succession of organized beings. By the aid of archæology he has been able to trace the progress of humanity through the ages. All sciences, in a word, complete one another: they carry their indispensable contingent for the knowledge of the history of the world. Without them man would have for his guide only his first hypotheses.

Before man was in possession of these means of investigation, all commentators on Genesis whose reason rebelled at material impossibilities, continued to revolve in the same circle of ideas, with no power to depart from them. Science has come to the rescue by attacking the old edifice of belief, opening a way whereby the whole aspect has changed entirely. Once the conducting thread is found, the difficulties are promptly met. In place of an imaginary Genesis, we have a positive, and in some respects an experimental, Genesis. The field of the universe is extended into the infinite. We behold the earth and the stars form themselves gradually in obedience to the eternal and immutable law, which testifies far more fully to the grandeur of the Deity than a miraculous creation suddenly originating from nothing by a sudden act of divinity after ages of inaction.

Since it is impossible to comprehend Genesis without the help of science, one can say most truthfully



that it is she who has been elected to constitute the true Genesis according to the laws of nature. Have we reached in this nineteenth century a sufficient power of scientific attainment to solve all the difficulties of the problem of Genesis? No, assuredly not; but one thing is certain, that all the principal errors are destroyed, and the most essential foundation laid for undeniable principles. The yet uncertain points are, properly speaking, only minute portions, which, whatever the future may bring forth, cannot impair the whole. Notwithstanding all the resources of which it has been able to avail itself, there is an important element still wanting, without which the work can never be complete.

Of all ancient histories of the creation of the world and the human race, that which approaches nearest to modern scientific revelation, notwithstanding the errors which it contains, — some of the latter being now distinctly pointed out by the finger of science, — is incontestably that of Moses. Some of these errors are such more in appearance than in reality, as they spring from false interpretation of certain words, whose primitive signification is lost as they pass from language to language by means of translation into different tongues, or whose meaning is changed with the customs of the nations, particularly the allegorical form peculiar to the Oriental style, of which the literal sense was taken, to the exclusion of the spiritual. The Bible contains statements that our reason, which has been developed by science, will not allow us to accept; and also others which seem strange and repugnant to us, because connected with customs which are not ours. But, not-

withstanding this, it would be wrong not to recognize the grand and beautiful thoughts which it contains. Allegory holds a conspicuous place in it, and under its veil conceals sublime truths, which appear, if one seeks for them, in the foundations of the ideas contained in them. Why has this veil not been sooner lifted? On one side it has been for the want of light which science and a healthy philosophy alone could give, and, on the other, the belief in the absolute immutability of a creed, consequent upon a too blind respect for the letter, to which reason bent blindly, fearing that science might not accord with the lattice-work of beliefs which were built upon their literal sense.

On account of the antiquity of these beliefs, it has been feared, that, if the first ring of the chain should be broken, all the meshes of the network would at length separate. Commentators, therefore, have shut their eyes when doubts arose; but we cannot evade danger by shutting our eyes to it. When a building totters, is it not more prudent to immediately replace defective stones by good ones, rather than to wait out of respect for the age of the edifice until there is no remedy for the evil other than its reconstruction from the foundation? In pursuing our investigations, even into the bowels of the earth, and into the blue depths of the sky above us, science has demonstrated in an undeniable manner the errors of the Mosaic Genesis taken in its literal sense, and the material impossibility of things having taken place literally as they are there represented to have done. It has thus given severe shocks to some ancient doctrines. The orthodox

faith is disturbed: it believes that its very cornerstone is removed by the adoption of these new ideas. But which is most likely to be right, Science marching prudently and progressively over the solid ground of figures and observation, without affirming anything before the proof of it is at hand, or History written at an epoch when means of observation were absolutely lacking? Should we believe the person who affirms that two and two make five, and refuses to verify it, or he who says two and two make four, and proves it?

But then it is objected, if the Bible is a divine revelation from God, how can it contain mistakes? while, if it be not a divine revelation, then has it no authority? Religious beliefs may thus be destroyed for want of a foundation. It must be one thing or the other: either Science is wrong, or Theology is right. If Theology is right, then an opinion contrary to hers cannot be a true one. There is no revelation superior to the authority of facts. If God, who is truth, could seduce men from the path of rectitude either knowingly or unconsciously, he would no more be God. If, then, facts contradict the words which are attributed to him, the logical conclusion is, that he has not pronounced them, or that they have been misconstrued. If Religion suffers in some respects by these contradictions, the wrong must not be ascribed to Science, which cannot agree with unreasonable statements, but to men for having prematurely founded absolute dogmas, which have been made a question of life and death, upon hypotheses susceptible of being overthrown by experience. We must resign ourselves to the sacrifice of some

things, whether we desire to or not: we cannot do otherwise. As the world progresses, the will of a few persons cannot arrest it in its onward march. The wiser way is to follow it, and accommodate ourselves to the new state of things, rather than to cling to old beliefs which are crumbling to pieces, at the risk of falling with them. Were it desirable to impose silence upon Science out of respect to texts of Scripture regarded as sacred, it would be as impossible to do so as to stop the movement of the earth. No religious systems have ever gained anything by sustaining manifest errors. The mission of Science is to discover the laws of nature. Now, as these laws are the work of God, they cannot be contrary to religions founded upon truth. Religion accomplishes its mission by means of these same principles; and, as a natural consequence, human intelligence is developed, which is also a divine work, advancing only with the permission of God by virtue of progressive laws which he has established. To hurl anathemas at progress, calling it a hindrance to religion, is to go contrary to the will of God. There is scarcely any thing so useless; for all the anathemas in the world will not hinder Science in her progressive work of bringing truth to light. If *Religion refuses to accompany Science*, she is left alone. Stationary religions can alone dread scientific discoveries. Scientific truths are only destructive to the systems of those who allow themselves to be distanced by progressive ideas by wrapping themselves in the absolutism of old beliefs. These persons have such a narrow idea of divinity, that they do not comprehend that to assimilate them-

selves with the laws of nature revealed by Science is to glorify God in his works ; but in their blindness they prefer to do homage to the spirit of evil.

*A religion which would be in no one point contradictory to the laws of nature would have nothing to fear from progress, and would be invulnerable.* Genesis comprises two divisions, — the history of the formation of the material world, and that of humanity in its dual (corporal and spiritual) principle. Science is limited in its researches by laws which rule matter. In dealing with man it has ever studied only his bodily envelope. And concerning this it has been enabled to give an account with incontestable precision of the principle parts of the mechanism of the universe and of the human organism. This important point attained, it has been further able to complete the Genesis of Moses, and to rectify the defective parts of it. But the history of man, considered as a spiritual being, is attached to a special order of ideas, which is not, properly speaking, in the domain of science, and which the latter, for this reason, has not made the subject of its investigations. It belongs more particularly to philosophy, which has formulated upon this point only contradictory systems, from genuine spirituality to the denial of the spiritual principle, and even of God, without other foundation than the personal ideas of human authors. It has thus left the question undecided for want of sufficient light to answer it. This, however, is the most important question for man ; for it is the problem of his past and future : that of the material world touches it only indirectly. It is the most important of all knowledge to learn of man's origin, —

what becomes of him, if he has lived before, if he will continue to live on forever, and what end is in store for him.

Upon all these questions science is mute. Philosophy gives opinions only, and these often diametrically opposed to each other; but at least she permits such questions to be discussed, which induces many people to range themselves on her side in preference to that of dogmatic theology, which allows of no discussion on the subject. All religions are in accord with each other in the acknowledgment of such first principles as the existence of the soul, at the same time not demonstrating it. They agree neither in belief concerning its origin, its past history, or its future destiny, and above all, in that which is the most essential, the conditions upon which its future happiness depends. The greater part of them accept pictures of the future imposed on them by the belief of their adepts, which can be supported only by blind faith, unable to endure a serious examination; the destiny which they accord to the soul being allied in their dogmas to ideas of the material world, and the mechanism of the universe universally entertained in primitive times, irreconcilable with the actual state of knowledge. Being able to lose only by examination and discussion, their devotees deem it better to proscribe both.

From these different faiths touching the future of man, doubts and incredulity arise. It is not possible that it should be otherwise. Every religion pretending to possess in exclusive measure all the truth, without making sufficiently powerful assertions to convince the majority, has left man in indecision

regarding it. However, incredulity leaves a painful void. Man regards with anxiety the unknown future upon which he must sooner or later enter. The idea of nonentity chills him. His conscience says to him, that beyond the present there is something for him : but what? His developed reason forbids him any longer to accept the histories which have quieted his early days, which have put conscience to sleep by his taking the allegory for a reality. What is the meaning of this allegory? Science has torn away the corner of the veil ; but she has not revealed that which it is most important for man to know. He interrogates her, but in vain : she answers nothing in a convincing way to calm his apprehensions. He finds everywhere affirmation hurling itself against negation, without more positive proofs on one side than on the other. Incertitude concerning things of the future life has made many men reject the duties of the material life with a kind of frenzy. Such is the inevitable effect in transitional epochs. The edifice of the past is crumbling away, and that of the future is not yet constructed. Man is like a lad who has lost the innocent belief of his earliest years, and has not yet obtained the knowledge of a riper age : he has only vague aspirations, which he knows not how to define. If the spiritual question regarding man has remained till our day in a theoretical condition, it is because direct means of observation have failed to establish the material theory of the world, and the field has remained open to the varying conceptions of the human mind ; while man has not known the laws which rule matter, and has not been able to apply the experimental method, he has erred

from system to system concerning the mechanism of the universe and the formation of the earth. It has been in the moral as in the physical order of things: in the attempt to establish ideas, men have failed in the essential element,—the knowledge of the laws of the spiritual principle.

This knowledge was reserved for our epoch, as the discovery of the laws of matter has been the work of the two last centuries. Until now the study of the spiritual principle (the study of metaphysics) has been purely speculative and theoretic. In Spiritism it is all experimental. By the aid of the medi-  
an-  
imic faculty, more developed in our day, — far more generalized and better studied, — man is found possessed of a new instrument of observation. Mediumship has been for the spiritual world that which the telescope has been for the astral, and the microscope for the world of infinitesimalities. It has allowed exploration of it, study, and one might say vision, of its connection with the corporeal world, — of the distinction in the living man between the intelligent and the material being; for they can now be seen to act separately. Once in relation with the inhabitants of the spirit-world, one has been able to follow the soul in its ascending march, in its migrations, in its transformations. At length the study of the spiritual element is made practical: this was wanting to all preceding commentators on Genesis; thus their inability to comprehend it, and to rectify its errors. The spiritual and material worlds, being in constant contact, are inseparable from each other. Both have their part to play in Genesis. Without the knowledge of laws which rule the former, it is as



impossible to create a complete Genesis as it would be for a sculptor to give life to a statue. At this day only, though neither material nor spiritual science has said its last word, man possesses the two necessary elements to throw light upon this immense problem. These two keys are necessary in order to arrive at even an approximate solution. As to the perfect solution, it may never be given to man to find it upon the earth, as there are some things which must ever appear to us as secrets with God.

## CHAPTER V.

### SYSTEMS OF THE ANCIENT AND MODERN WORLD.

THE first idea that man forms of the earth, of the movements of the stars, and of the constitution of the universe, must be, in the commencement of his observations, entirely based upon the testimony of the senses. In his ignorance of the most elementary laws of physics, and of the forces of nature, having only his limited sight as a means of observation, he was able to judge only by appearances. As he beheld the sun appear in the morning outside of the horizon, and disappear in the evening on the other side, he naturally concluded that it revolved around the earth, whilst the latter remained stationary. If it had been suggested to him that the contrary was the truth, he would have replied that that was impossible; for would he not have declared that we see the sun change its position, and we do not feel the earth move? The few facts known then by voyagers, whose journeys exceeded rarely the limits of their tribe or of the valley in which they dwelt, would not permit of their establishing the sphericity of the earth. In what way could they arrive at the conclusion that the earth is a ball? Men would not have been able to support this assertion; and, in supposing it inhabited on all its surface, how would

they have supposed it possible to live in opposite hemispheres, the head down and feet up? The fact would have appeared less possible when the rotary movement of the globe should have been explained. When one sees in our day, when the law of gravitation is known, people relatively enlightened, unable to give an account of this phenomenon, is it astonishing that men in the early ages had not even suspected it? The earth to them was a flat surface, circular as a millstone, extending out of sight in the far horizon: hence arose the saying yet in use, "Going to the end of the world." Its limits, its thickness, its interior, its interior surface, that which was beneath them, was unknown to them.<sup>1</sup>

The heavens appearing to be concave in form, constituted, according to common belief, a real vault, the lower borders of which rested on the earth, and marked the end of it, — a vast dome, the space

<sup>1</sup> Hindoo mythology taught that the sun was "divested in the evening of its light, and traversed the sky during the night with face obscured. Greek mythology represented the car of Apollo as drawn by four horses. Anaximander of Miletus maintained in concord with Plutarch, that the sun was a chariot filled with a very brilliant fire, which escaped through a circular opening. Epicurus gave as his opinion that the sun was lighted in the morning, and extinguished at night in the waters of the ocean. Others thought that it was made of pumice-stone heated to a state of incandescence. Anaxagoras regarded it as a heated iron of the magnitude of the Peloponnesus. Strange to relate, the ancients were so invincibly determined to consider the apparent size of this body as real, that they persecuted this rash philosopher for having attributed such magnitude to the torch of day, that Pericles was obliged to exercise all the power of his authority to save him from condemnation to death, and commute the latter to a sentence of exile." (*Flammariou: Studies and Lectures upon Astronomy*, p. 6.) If they held such ideas in the fifth century, before the Christian Era, in the most flourishing times of Greece, we cannot be astonished at those entertained by men in earlier times on the system of the universe.

of which was filled with air. With no idea of the infinity of space, incapable even of conceiving it, men imagined this vault formed of solid matter; whence the name of "firmament" which has survived such a belief, and which signifies firm, enduring (from the Latin *firma mentum*, derived from *firmus*, "firm," and from the Greek *herma*, *hermatos*, a prop, or supporter, or fulcrum). The stars, of the nature of which they had no suspicions, were to them simply luminous points, small and large, attached to the vault like suspended lamps, disposed on one surface only, consequently all at the same distance from the earth, in the manner in which they are represented in the interior of certain cupolas, which are painted blue in imitation of the azure hue of the sky. Although to-day ideas are changed, the usage of the ancient expressions is retained. We say yet, for example, "the starry vault;" "under heaven's arch." The formation of clouds by the evaporation of the waters of the earth was then equally unknown. They did not suspect that the rain which falls from the sky arose in vapor from the earth; for they did not see the water arise. Whence the belief in large and small bodies of water from celestial and terrestrial sources, from reservoirs situated in lofty regions, — a supposition which accorded perfectly with the idea of a solid vault capable of maintaining them.

The larger bodies of water, escaping through fissures in the sky, fell in rain; and the rain fell gently or came in torrents, according to the size of these openings. The complete ignorance of the whole universe, and of the laws which rule it, of the nature, constitution, and destination of the stars, which

seemed, besides, so small compared with the earth, would necessarily make the latter to be considered as the principal object in creation, and the stars as accessories created solely to give light to its inhabitants. These prejudices are cherished by some at this day. Many people believe still that the stars are ornaments of the sky, placed there to please the eye of man. They delayed not to perceive the apparent movement of the stars in a body from east to west, rising in the evening, and going down in the morning, preserving their respective positions. This observation had for a long time no other result than that of confirming the idea of a solid vault carrying the stars along in its rotary movement. These first simple ideas have made, during long secular periods, the foundation of religious beliefs, and have served as a base for all ancient cosmogonies. Later they discovered, by the direction of the movement of the stars, and their periodical return in the same order, that the celestial vault could not be simply a hemisphere resting upon the earth, but a hollow sphere, in the centre of which was the earth, flat at the utmost convex, and inhabited only upon its upper surface. This was a progressive idea. But upon what rested the earth? It would be useless to relate all the ridiculous suppositions born of the imagination. That of the Indians, who declared it was supported by four white elephants, the latter standing on the wings of a vulture, is sufficient for an example. Wise people avowed that they knew nothing about it. However, a general opinion, extending into pagan theogonies, appointed the lower place, otherwise called the depths of the earth, or under it, — they knew not much about it,

—for the sojourn of the reprobates, and called it hell; and in celestial heights, beyond the region of the stars, they fixed the home of the blessed. The word “hell” is now used, although it should have lost its etymological signification, since geology has dislodged the place of eternal sorrow from the centre of the earth, and astronomy demonstrated that there are neither upper nor lower directions in space. Under the clear sky of Chaldea, India, and Egypt (cradle of the most antique civilization), one could observe the movement of the stars with as much precision as the absence of special instruments permitted. They saw at first that certain stars had a movement of their own independent of the rest, which caused them to no longer believe that they were attached to the vault. They called them wandering stars or planets, in order to distinguish them from fixed stars. They calculated their movements and periodical returns.

In the diurnal movement of the starry spheres they observed the immovableness of the polar star, around which the others described, in twenty-four hours, oblique or parallel circles, smaller or greater, according to their distance from the central star. This was the first step towards the knowledge of the obliquity of the world’s axis. Moreover, long voyages enabled them to observe the change of aspect in the sky according to latitudes and seasons. The elevation of the polar star above the horizon varying with the latitude, suggested the idea of the roundness of the earth. Thus little by little they arrived at more accurate ideas of the system of the world. Towards the year 600 before Jesus Christ, Thales of

Miletus, Asia Minor, became convinced of the sphericity of the earth, the obliquity of the ecliptic, and the cause of the eclipses. A century later Pythagoras of Samos discovered the diurnal movement of the earth upon its axis, its annual movement around the sun, and connected the planets and comets to the solar system. One hundred and sixty years before Jesus Christ, Hipparchus of Alexandria, Egypt, invented the astrolabe, calculated and predicted the eclipses, observed the spots on the sun, ascertained the tropical year and the duration of the revolutions of the moon. However precious these discoveries were for the progress of science, they were nearly two thousand years in becoming popularized.

These new ideas, having then as a means of diffusion only a few rare manuscripts, which remained in the possession of some philosophers who taught them to privileged disciples, the masses of the people, whom they dreamed not of enlightening, profited nothing by them, but continued to cherish old beliefs. Towards the year 140 of the Christian Era, Ptolemy, one of the most illustrious men of the Alexandrian school, combining his own ideas with common beliefs, and a few of the more recent astronomical discoveries, composed a system, which one can call a compound of beliefs, which took his name, and during a period of nearly fifteen centuries was solely adopted in the civilized world. According to the theory of Ptolemy, the earth is a sphere in the centre of the universe, and is composed of four elements, — earth, water, air, and fire. This is the first region, called “elementary.” The second, called “the ethereal,” comprised eleven heavens, or concentric

spheres, turning around the earth; viz., that of the moon, those of Mercury, Venus, of the sun, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, of the fixed stars, of the first crystalline heaven (a solid transparent sphere), of the second crystalline sphere, and at last of the outer circle, of primitive mobility, which, by its motion, was supposed to carry around all those within it, causing them to make a revolution every twenty-four hours. Beyond these eleven spheres was the empyrean, or highest sphere, "abode of the blessed," thus named from the Greek *pyr* or *pur*, which signifies "fire," because they believed this region to be resplendent with light like fire. The belief in many superposed heavens or spheres has prevailed for a long time; but they varied in regard to number. The seventh was generally regarded as the highest, whence the expression, "To be carried to the seventh heaven." St. Paul said that he had been elevated to the third heaven. Independent of the general motion, the stars had, according to Ptolemy, some particular movements of their own, greater or less according to their distance from the centre. The fixed stars made a revolution in 25,816 years. This last computation denotes knowledge of the precession of the equinoxes, which is actually accomplished in about 25,000 years. At the commencement of the sixteenth century, Copernicus, a celebrated astronomer, born at Thorn, Prussia, in 1472, and who died in 1543, reproduced the ideas of Pythagoras. He published a system which, confirmed each day by new observations, was favorably received, and was not long in proving that of Ptolemy to be unreliable.



According to this system, the sun is the centre; the planets describe circular orbs around this body of light; the moon is a satellite of the earth. A century later, in 1609, Galileo, born at Florence, invented the telescope. In 1610 he discovered the four satellites of Jupiter, and calculated their revolutions. He recognized that the planets have no light like the stars, but that they receive light from the sun; that they are spheres similar to the earth. He observed their phases, and determined the duration of their rotation upon their axes. He thus gave, by material proofs, a definite sanction to the system of Copernicus. From this period the belief in superposed heavens was extinguished. The planets were recognized as worlds similar to the earth, and like it, without doubt, inhabited. The sun was believed to be a star, and the centre around which the planets, which are subject to it, revolve. The stars are innumerable suns, probable centres of as many planetary systems. The stars are no more confined to a zone of the celestial sphere, but are irregularly disseminated in limitless space. Those which appear to touch each other are immeasurable distances apart. The smallest, in appearance, are the farthest from us; the largest, those which are nearest, are hundreds of thousand millions of miles distant from us. The groups which have gained the name of constellations are only apparent assemblages caused by distance, perspective effects, such as appear to the view of him who is placed at a fixed point from lights dispersed over a vast plain, or the trees of a forest. But these assemblages do not in reality exist. If one could be transported into the region of one of

these constellations by measure, as one would approach, the form would disappear, and new groups would design themselves to the sight. Since these groups do not really exist, the signification that a common superstitious belief attributes to them is illusory, as they have only as groups an imaginary existence. In order to distinguish the constellations, names have been given to them, such as those of Lion, Bull, Twins, Virgin, Balance, Goat, Crab, Orion, Hercules, Great Bear or Chariot of David, Little Bear, Lyre, etc.; and they have been represented by figures corresponding to these names, but which in every case have but a fanciful connection with the apparent forms of the starry groups. We should then seek in vain for these figures in the sky. The belief in the influence of the constellations, particularly those which constitute the twelve signs of the Zodiac, comes from the idea attached to the names they bear. If that which is called Lion had been named Ass or Lamb, people would have attributed to it a totally different influence. Galileo and Copernicus destroyed the old cosmogonies. Astronomical knowledge advanced: it could not retrograde.

History records the difficulties these men of genius had to encounter through prejudice, especially through the sectarian spirit of the times, which was interested in the maintenance of errors upon which the priesthood had founded beliefs considered unchangeable. The invention of an optical instrument has been the means of destroying the trelliswork of the beliefs of many thousands of years. Nothing could prevail against a truth which could be demonstrated

to man's vision. Thanks to the art of printing, the public gained a knowledge of the new ideas; and while some recognized their truth, and took part in the struggle for truth, it soon became necessary to combat, not simply a few individuals, but general opinion, which would take its part in the contest for truth. How grand the universe is compared with the narrow proportions our forefathers assigned to it! how sublime God's work when we see its accomplishment according to the laws of nature! But only with the aid of time, and the efforts and devotion of men of genius, were the sealed eyes opened, and the bandage of ignorance removed. Henceforth the way will be open for numerous and illustrious wise men to enter upon the completion of the outlined work. Kepler, in Germany, discovered the celebrated laws which bear his name, and by the aid of which he discovered that planets describe, not circular orbs, but ellipses, of which the sun occupies one of the focuses. Newton, in England, discovered the law of universal gravitation. Laplace, in France, created celestial mechanics. In short, astronomy is no more a system founded upon conjecture and probability, but a science established upon the most rigorous bases of arithmetic and geometry. Thus one of the foundation-stones of Genesis is laid.

## CHAPTER VI.

GENERAL URANOGRAPHY.—SPACE AND TIME.—MATTER.—LAWS AND FORCES.—FIRST CREATION.—UNIVERSAL CREATION.—SUNS AND PLANETS.—SATELLITES.—COMETS.—THE MILKY WAY.—THE FIXED STARS.—THE DESERTS OF SPACE.—ETERNAL SUCCESSION OF WORLDS.—UNIVERSAL LIFE.—SCIENCE.—MORAL CONSIDERATIONS.

*Space and Time.*—Many definitions of space have been given. The principal one is this: Space is the extent which separates two bodies; from which certain sophists have inferred, that, where nobody is, there can be no space. Doctors of theology have taken this idea as the base of their belief, that there is necessarily an end to space, alleging that bodies limited to a certain number cannot form an infinite succession, and that where bodies no longer exist is also the end of space. Yet another definition of space is, The place where worlds move, the void where matter acts, etc. . . . Let us leave, in the treatises where they repose, all these definitions, which define nothing.<sup>1</sup>

Space is one of those words which represents a primitive and axiomatic idea, self-evident, to which

<sup>1</sup> This chapter is an extract, word for word, from a series of communications dictated to the Spiritual Society of Paris, in 1862 and 1863, under the title of Uranographical Studies, and signed, GALILEO, *M. C. F. Medium.*

the diverse definitions which are given serve only to obscure its meaning. We all know what space is; and I desire only to establish its infinity in order that our subsequent studies may find no barrier opposing itself to the investigation of our ideas. Now, I say that space is infinite for this reason: that it is impossible to suppose any limit to it, and that, notwithstanding the difficulty of gaining a conception of infinitude, it is, however, easier to think of going eternally through space, than to decide upon a stopping-place in it beyond which no more space extends. In order to grasp as far as is possible with our limited faculties the infinitude of space, let us suppose ourselves departing from the earth, lost in the midst of infinitude, towards any point in the universe, and that with the exceeding celerity of an electric spark, which traverses thousands of leagues in a second. Scarcely have we left our globe, than, having passed over millions of miles, we find ourselves in a place whence our earth will appear to us only under the aspect of a pale star. An instant after, following always the same direction, we shall arrive near the far-distant stars, which you can scarcely distinguish from your terrestrial station; and whence not only the earth is lost to our sight in the heavenly depths, but also your sun's splendor is eclipsed by the distance which separates us from it. Propelled incessantly at the same lightning speed, we pass over planetary systems at every step as we advance in space, over islands of ethereal light, over starry ways, and glorious places where God has scattered worlds profusely, as he has sown plants on terrestrial prairies. Now it is only a few minutes

since we took our departure from the earth, and already hundreds of millions of millions of miles separate us from the earth, thousands of worlds have been displayed to our sight, and yet listen! We have in reality advanced but one step in the universe. If we continue for years, ages, thousands of centuries, hundreds of millions of earthly periods of time, to traverse incessantly with the same lightning speed the fields of space, on whatever side we may go, toward whatsoever point we may direct ourselves from this invisible grain which we have quitted, and which is called earth, the same immensity of space will be ever before us. This is space. Time, like space, is a self-evident fact. One can make a better estimate of it by establishing its relation to the infinite whole.

Time is the succession of things. It is bound to eternity in the same manner as things are joined to infinitude. Let us suppose ourselves at the beginning of our world, at that primitive epoch where the earth was not held in equilibrium by the divine impetus; in short, at the commencement of Genesis. Time has not arisen from the mysterious cradle of nature, and no one can tell at what epoch of the ages we are, since the pendulum of the centuries is not yet in motion. But, silence! the first hour of a new-born earth resounds through the air, and henceforth are night and morning. Beyond the earth eternity remains impassive and immovable, although time marches with steady feet in other worlds. Upon the earth time is enthroned, and during a series of generations years and centuries of it will be counted. Let us now transport ourselves to the last day of this

world, to the hour when, its power for good being paralyzed by age and decay, it will be effaced from the book of life never more to re-appear. Here the succession of events is arrested, the terrestrial movements which measure time are interrupted, and time is ended with them. This simple exposition of natural things which give birth to time, perpetuate it, and then allow it to be extinguished, suffices to show that, seen from the point where we must place ourselves for our studies, time is a drop of water which falls from the cloud into the sea, of which the fall is measured. There are as many different and contradictory times as there are worlds in the vast expanse. Beyond worlds eternity alone replaces these ephemeral inheritances, and quietly fills with its light immovable the immensity of the heavens. Immensity and eternity without limits,—such are the two grand properties of universal nature. The eye of the observer who traverses untiringly the immeasurable distances of space, as well as that of the geologist who peers into the secrets of the ages, descending even into the depths of a yawning eternity, where they will some day be engulfed, act in concert, each in his way, to acquire this double idea of infinitude, duration, and extent. Now, in preserving this order of ideas, it will be easy for us to conceive that time being only connected with transitory things depending wholly upon things which can be measured, if, taking the terrestrial centuries for units, we piled them thousands upon thousands in order to form a colossal number, this number will never represent more than a moment in eternity, just as thousands of leagues joined to thousands of leagues

are only a speck in boundless extent. Thus, for example, time being unknown in eternity, and the ages being totally distinct from the ethereal life of the soul, we could write a number as long as the terrestrial equator, and suppose ourselves aged by this number of centuries, without making our soul one day older; and, adding to this uncountable number of ages a series of similar numbers as long as from here to the sun, or still more yet, imagining ourselves to live during the prodigious succession of cyclular periods represented by the addition of those numbers when we should have passed through them, the incomprehensible accumulation of years which would weigh upon our heads would be as though they were not: an entire eternity would always be before us. Time is only a comparative measure of the inheritance of transitory things. Eternity is susceptible of no measure as regards duration of time: it owns no beginning or end; the present only belongs to it. If centuries upon centuries are less than a second compared with eternity, what comparison does the duration of human life bear to it?

*Matter.* — At first sight nothing would appear so profoundly varied, so essentially distinct, as the diverse substances which compose the world. Among the objects in art or nature which daily pass before our eyes, are there two objects which can be accused of a perfect identity? is it not only a parity of composition? What dissimilarity at the point of view of solidity, of compressibility, of weight and multiple properties of bodies, between atmospheric gas and a thread of gold, between the aqueous molecules in the clouds, and those of the mineral which forms the



bony framework of the globe! what diversity between the chemical tissue of the varied plants which decorate the vegetable kingdom, and that of the no less numerous representatives of animal life upon earth! However, we can state as an absolute and fundamental truth, that all substances known and unknown, however dissimilar they may appear, either in view of their constitution or in regard to their reciprocal action, are only different forms through which matter presents itself, only varieties into which it is transformed under the direction of forces innumerable which govern it. Chemistry, of which the progress has been so rapid since the epoch in which I lived, which its adepts themselves banish still to the secret domain of science, — this new science, which one can justly consider the child of this century is, we observe, uniquely based, far more solidly than its elder sisters, upon the experimental method. Chemistry, I say, has had fair play with the four primitive elements which the ancients agreed to recognize in nature. It has shown that the terrestrial element is only a combination of diverse substances varied to infinitude; that the air and water are equally decomposable, that they are the product of a certain number of equivalents of gas; that fire, far from being itself a principal element, is only a state of matter resulting from the universal movement to which it is submitted, and is of a sensible or latent combustion, In return it has found a considerable number of primates until then unknown, which have appeared to form, by their determined combinations, diverse substances. Different bodies, that it (chemistry) has studied by following certain laws, act simultaneously,

and in given proportions, in the works operated in the grand laboratory of nature. These primates it has named *simple bodies*, indicating by that that it considers them primitive and indecomposable, and that by no known operation can they be reduced to parts relatively more simple than themselves.<sup>1</sup>

But there, where the appreciation of man is checked even when he is aided by the most impressionable of his artificial senses, the work of nature continues; there, where the common herd accept appearance for reality, is where the practitioner raises the veil, and distinguishes the beginning of things. The eye of him who has detected the mole of nature's action sees alone under the constitutive materials of the world the primitive *cosmic matter*, simple and alone, varied in certain countries at the epoch of their birth, divided into solidarities during their life, which at length have become disjointed, and received into the receptacle of life's boundless whole by decomposition.

It is of these questions that we ourselves, spirits, lovers of science, speak, when we assert that the opinions we express are merely conjectural. Upon these questions I will either keep silence, or prove my knowledge. To those who then would be tempted to see in my words only a dangerous theory, I will say, Learn, if possible, by investigation the multiplicity of the operations of nature, and you will recognize, that, if one admits not the unity of matter, it

<sup>1</sup> The principal simple bodies are, among non-metallic bodies, oxygen, hydrogen, nitrogen, chlorine, carbon, phosphorus, sulphur, and iodine; among metallic bodies are gold, silver, mercury, lead, pewter, zinc, iron, copper, arsenic, sodium, potassium, calcium, aluminium, etc.

is impossible to explain, not only the science of the suns and spheres, but, without going so far, the germination of a seed in the earth, or the production of an insect. If one observes such a diversity in matter, it is because the forces which have presided at its transformations, the conditions in which they are produced being unlimited in number, the various combinations of matter must be unlimited also. Then the substance that one desires to comprehend belongs properly to fluids; that is to say, imponderable bodies, or it may be those dressed with the ordinary properties of matter. There is in all the universe only one primitive substance, — the cosmic matter, or cosmos of uranography.

*Laws and Forces.* — If one of those unknown beings who spend their ephemeral existence in the depths of the dark regions of the ocean, if one of those polygrastic animals, one of the Nereids, miserable animalcules, who are known as ichthyophagous fish in the submarine forests, received suddenly the gift of intelligence, the faculty of studying their world, and of establishing a reasonable idea of that living nature which develops in their midst, and of the terrestrial world which is not now included in the field of their observation; if by the marvellous effect of some new power this strange race of beings should be lifted out of their unbroken darkness to the surface of the sea, not far from the fertile banks of an isle covered with luxuriant vegetation, to the genial sun, dispenser of a beneficent warmth, — what judgment would they pass? what theories of universal creation would be theirs, — theories to be soon effaced by larger appreciation, but by theories still as

relatively incomplete as the first? Such is, O man! an image of all your speculative science.<sup>1</sup>

Now, as I come to treat of the laws and forces which rule the universe, I who am, like you, a being relatively ignorant of real science, notwithstanding the apparent superiority which is given me over my earthly brothers, the opportunity which is mine of studying questions in nature which is withheld from them in their position, my object is only to expose to you a general idea of universal laws, without explaining in detail the methods of operation, and nature of the special forces dependent upon them. There is an ethereal fluid which pervades space and penetrates bodies. This fluid is ether, or primitive cosmic matter, generatrix of the world and beings. Forces inhere in ether which preside at the metamorphoses of matter, — the necessary and immutable laws which rule the world. These multiple forces, indefinitely varied according to the combinations of matter, localized according to masses or bulk, diversified in their modes of action according to circumstances and places, are known upon earth under the names of weight, cohesion, affinity, attraction, magnetism, and active electricity; the agent of the vibratory movements, those of sound, light, heat, etc. In other worlds they are presented under other

<sup>1</sup> Such is the state of those who deny the spiritual world, when, after having been despoiled of their fleshly envelope, the horizons of this world are revealed to their vision, they comprehend the emptiness of the theories whereby they attempted to explain every thing by matter alone. However, these horizons hold yet for them mysteries which are successively unveiled as they are raised to greater heights of wisdom by purification; but on their entrance into this new world they are first to recognize their blindness, and how far they were from the truth.

aspects, offer other characters unknown in this, and in the immense extent of the heavens an indefinite number of forces are developed upon an unimaginable ladder, the grandeur of which we are as incapable of estimating as the crustacean animal in the depth of the ocean is of understanding the universality of terrestrial phenomena.<sup>1</sup>

Now, just as there is but one simple primitive substance generatrix of all bodies, but diversified in its combinations, even as all forces depend upon a universal law diversified in its effects, and which exists from the beginning, and which in the eternal decrees has been everywhere imposed upon creation in order to constitute harmony and permanent stability, nature is never opposed to itself. The coat-of-arms of the universe has for its only device  $\frac{\text{unity}}{\text{variety}}$ . In climbing the ladder of the worlds, one finds unity in harmony in all creation. At the same time there is an infinite variety in this immense parterre of stars. In passing through the degrees of life from the low-

<sup>1</sup> Should we bring to this all that we know, we should not comprehend more fully that which escapes our senses than the blind man so born comprehends the effects of light and the use of eyes. There can then be in other places properties of cosmic fluid and combinations, of which we have no idea; of effects appropriated to needs unknown to us, giving place to new and other modes of perception. We do not, for example, comprehend how we can see without bodily eyes and without light; but who says that there exist not other agents than the light affecting special organisms, the somnambule sight, which neither distance, material obstacles, nor darkness can arrest, offers us an example? Let us suppose that in some world the inhabitants are normally that which our somnambulists are exceptionally: they will have no need of the light or of eyes like ours, and they will see that which we cannot see. It is the same with all other sensations: the conditions of vitality and perceptibility, sensations, and needs vary according to places.

est being even to God, the great law of continuity is recognizable. In considering the forces in themselves, one can find a series whose result, mingling with the generatrix, is the universal law. You cannot appreciate this law to the full extent, since the forces which represent it in your field of observation are restrained and limited. However, gravitation and electricity can be regarded as a large application of the primordial law which reigns beyond the heavens. All these forces are eternal, — we will explain this word, — universal as the creation. Being inherent in the cosmic fluid, they necessarily act in all things everywhere, modifying their action by their simultaneous working or their succession, predominating here, effacing themselves farther on; powerful and active at certain points, latent or secret at others, but finally preparing, directing, preserving and destroying worlds in their diverse periods of life, governing marvellous works of nature, wherever they are exerted, assuring to creation eternal splendor.

*The First Creation.* — After having considered the universe under general points of view, its composition, its laws, and its properties, we can extend our studies to the mode of formation which gave light to worlds and beings. We would descend then to the creation of the earth particularly, and to its actual state in the universality of things, and from whence, taking the globe as a starting-point and for relative unity, we would proceed with our planetary and sidereal studies. If we have well considered the connection, or rather the opposition, of eternity to time, — if we are familiar with the idea that time is only a relative measure in the succession of tran-

sitory things, whilst eternity is essentially immovable and permanent, and that it is susceptible of no measurement as regards duration of time,—we should comprehend that there is no commencement or end to it. On the other side, if we could form a just idea—although necessarily a very feeble one—of the infinitude of divine power, we could comprehend how it is possible that the universe has always been, and always will be; how God's eternal perfections always spoke of him before worlds were born. Before time was born, immeasurable eternity received the divine word, and impregnated space eternal as itself. God, who has always existed, has created all eternity, which could not be otherwise; for at some distant epoch, from which our imagination recoils (the supposed limits of creation), there will remain always beyond this limit an eternity. Weigh well this thought,—an eternity during which the divine hypostasis, the infinite volition, had been absorbed in a mute, inactive, and unfruitful lethargy, an eternity of apparent death for the eternal Father who gives life to beings; of indifferent speechlessness for the Word which governs them, of cold and selfish sterility for the spirit of love and of vivication. Let us better comprehend the grandeur of divine action, and its perpetuity under the semblance of an absolute being! God is the sun of beings: he is the light of the worlds. Now, the appearance of the sun gives birth instantaneously to floods of light, which fill all space. So does the universe, born of the Eternal, raise us in thought to unimaginable periods of infinite duration, even to the time of the "*Fiat lux*" in the beginning. The contemplation of the

absolute beginning of objects raises us to their Creator. Their successive appearances in the domain of existence constitute the order of perpetual creation.

What mortal is there who knows how to reveal the unknown and superbly veiled magnificence which lay under the darkness of the ages, which was developed in those ancient times when none of the marvels of the present universe existed? At this primitive epoch, where the voice of the Lord was making itself heard, the materials which were in the future to assemble symmetrically to form themselves into the temple of nature were found on the bosom of the infinite void, when at the sound of this mysterious voice, which every creature venerates as a mother's, when the morning stars harmoniously sang together! The world was in its cradle: it was not yet established in its strength and plenitude of life. No: the creative power never contradicts itself; and, like all things, the universe was born a child. Invested with laws previously framed, and by initial impulsion inherent in its formation, primitive, cosmic matter, gave birth successively to whirlwinds, to agglomerations of diffuse fluid, to masses of nebulous matter, infinitely modified and divided, in order to form in the immeasurable regions of space different centres of simultaneous or successive creations, by reason of forces which predominate over each other, and by ulterior circumstances which presided at their developments. These primitive centres became each the focus of a special life. Those least disseminated in space, and richest in acting forces and principles, commenced from that



time their particular astral life. Others occupying unlimited space grew very slowly, or divided themselves anew into other secondary centres. In carrying ourselves back only a few millions of centuries beyond this present epoch, our earth did not exist. Our solar system had not yet commenced the evolutions of planetary life; and yet splendid suns illuminated the ether. Already inhabited planets gave life and existence to a multitude of beings who have preceded us in our earthly career. Opulent productions of an unknown nature, and marvellous heavenly phenomena, had developed, under the gaze of other eyes, pictures of a boundless creation, and even more. Already some splendors, which had caused the hearts of other mortals ere then to palpitate with the thought of infinite power, were effaced; and we poor little beings who come after an eternity of life has passed, we believe ourselves contemporaneous with creation. Yet again let us comprehend nature better. Let us know that eternity is both before and behind us, that space is the theatre of an unimaginable succession and simultaneity of creations. The nebulæ we scarcely distinguish in the far-distant heavens are agglomerations of suns in process of formation; others are milky ways of inhabited worlds; others the seat of catastrophe and decay. Let us know that even as we are placed in the midst of an infinitude of worlds, even as we are in a double infinitude of anterior and ulterior durations, that universal creation is not for us alone, and that we must not consider this, our little globule, as an isolated formation.

*Universal Creation.* — After mounting as high as we

can, despite our weakness, toward the concealed source whence worlds flow like drops of water in a river, let us consider the march of successive creations, and their serial developments. Primitive cosmic matter comprises the material fluid and vital elements which unroll the magnificence of all the universes throughout eternity. She is the fruitful mother of all things, the first grandmother, and, still more, the eternal generatrix. She has not disappeared, this substance from which sidereal spheres are produced; she is not dead, this power, for she brings incessantly new creations into light, and incessantly receives the reconstituted principles of worlds which are effaced from the eternal book of life. Ethereal matter more or less rarefied, which descends among the inter-planetary spaces, — this cosmic fluid which fills the world more or less rarefied in immeasurable regions, rich in agglomerations of stars more or less condensed, where astral heavens do not yet shine forth more or less modified by diverse combinations according to locality in space, — is none other than the primal substance in which primitive forces reside, from which nature draws all things.<sup>1</sup>

This fluid which penetrates bodies is like an immense ocean. In it resides the vital principle which gives birth and life to beings, perpetuating it upon

<sup>1</sup> If one inquires what is the principle of these forces, and how can it be even in the substance which produces it, we would reply that mechanism offers us numerous examples. The elasticity which makes a spring unbend, — is not that in the spring itself, and does it not depend upon the mode of the aggregation of molecules? The body which obeys centrifugal force receives its impulsion from the primitive movement which has been impressed upon it.

every globe according to its condition. It is a principle in a latent state, which slumbers when no existence calls for it. Every mineral, vegetable, animal, or other—for many other natural kingdoms exist, the existence of which you do not suspect—knows how, by virtue of this universal vital principle, to appropriate the conditions of its existence and of its duration. The molecules of the mineral have their share of this life, as well as the seed and the germ, and group themselves, like an organized being, into symmetrical forms, which constitute individualities. It is very important to comprehend this idea: that primitive cosmic matter was invested not only with laws which assure the stability of worlds, but also with the universal vital principle which causes spontaneous generations upon every world, in proportion as conditions for the successive existence of beings manifest themselves, when the time comes for the appearance of children of life, during the creative period. Thus universal creation is accomplished.

It is then true to say, that, the operations of nature being the expression of the divine will, God has always created, and creates unceasingly, and always will create.

Until now we have passed over in silence the subject of the spiritual world, which also is a part of creation, and accomplishes its destiny in accordance with the august decrees of the Master. I can give only very limited information concerning the mode of the creation of spirits, on account of my own ignorance; and I must still keep silent upon some matters into which I have been permitted to search. To those who are religiously desirous of ob-

taining knowledge, and who are humble before God, I will say (while I implore them not to base any one system prematurely on my words), that the spirit does not receive divine illumination until the time when free will and conscience are given him to grasp the idea of his high destiny; i.e., until he has passed through a series of inferior existences, during which the realization of his individuality is slowly elaborated. This only dates from the day when the Lord impresses upon his forehead his august seal: then the spirit takes rank as human. Again, I beg of you, do not build upon my words dogmatic theories like those so sadly celebrated in the history of metaphysics. I would a thousand times prefer to keep silent forever concerning questions so far above our ordinary meditations, than expose you to a misconstruction of the sense of my teachings, and so ingulf you through my imperfection in the inextricable labyrinths of deism or fatalism.

*The Suns and the Planets.* — Once upon a time in the history of the universe, lost among the myriad worlds, cosmic matter was condensed into the form of an immense nebulous cloud. This nebula was animated by the universal laws which govern matter. By virtue of these laws, and notably by the molecular force of attraction, it took the form of a spheroid, the only one which can originally be taken by a mass of isolated matter in space. The circular movement, produced by gravitation exactly equal in all the molecular zones toward the centre, soon modified the primitive sphere in order to conduct it from movement to movement toward the lenticular form. We speak of the whole of the nebula. New forces surged

in the train of this rotary movement,—centripetal and centrifugal force,—the first tending to draw every particle to the centre, the second tending to cause the recession of every atom from it. Now, the movement accelerating itself, according to the condensation of the nebula and its radius, augmenting as it approaches the lenticular form, the centrifugal force, incessantly developed by these two causes, soon predominated over the central attraction the same as a too rapid movement of a sling breaks the cord, and throws the projectile to a distance. Thus the predominance of centrifugal force detached the equatorial circle of the nebula, and with this ring formed a new mass, isolated from the first, but nevertheless in submission to its empire.

This mass has conserved its equatorial movement, which, modified, became its movement of translation around the solar body. Moreover, its new state gave to it a rotary movement around its proper centre. The nebulous generatrix which gave birth to this new world is condensed, and has resumed the spherical form; but the primitive heat developed by its different movements weakening it only by very slow degrees, the phenomenon we have just described will reproduce itself often during a long period, while this nebulous mass will not become dense or solid enough to oppose an efficacious resistance to the modifications of form, which successively impress its rotary movement. It will then not have given birth simply to one astral body, but to hundreds of worlds detached from the central focus, issued from it by the mode of formation already presented. Now, each one of these worlds, invested like the primitive world with

natural forces presiding at the creation of the universe, will engender in succession new globes gravitating henceforth around it, as it gravitates in concurrence with its brothers around the focus of their existence and life. Each one of these worlds will be a sun, a centre of a whirling body of planets, successively escaped from its equator. These planets will each receive a particular life, although dependent upon their astral generator. Planets are thus formed of masses of condensed matter, but not yet solidified, detached from the central mass by the action of centrifugal force, and taking, by virtue of the laws of motion, the spheroidal form more or less elliptic, according to the degree of fluidity they have maintained. One of these planets is the earth, which, before being cooled and invested with a solid crust, must have given birth to the moon by the same mode of astral formation to which it owes its own existence. The earth henceforth inscribed in the book of life a cradle of creatures whose feebleness is protected under the wing of Divine Providence, a new cord in the infinite harp which must vibrate in its place in the universal concert of worlds.

*The Satellites.* — Before the planetary bodies have attained a degree of coolness sufficient for solidification, smaller bodies, veritable liquid globules, are detached from some in the equatorial plane, — a plane in which the centrifugal force is the greatest, — and which by virtue of the same laws have acquired a movement of translation around their planetary generatrix, like theirs around their central astral generator. Thus the earth has given birth to the moon, the body of which, being smaller, has cooled in a

shorter time. Now the laws and forces which presided at its detachment from the terrestrial equator and its movement of translation in this same plane, act in such a way, that this world, in place of being invested with the spheroidal form, takes that of an ovoid globe; that is to say, having the elongated form of an egg, the centre of gravity being in the inferior part. The conditions by which the distinctive form of the moon was effected would permit it scarcely to quit the earth, and constrain it to remain perpetually suspended in its sky like an ovoid figure, of which the heaviest parts form the lower face turned toward the earth, and of which the least dense parts occupy the summit, which is the side opposed to the earth, elevating itself towards the heavens. This is the reason that this body presents continually the same face to us. It can be likened, in order to better comprehend its geological state, to a globe composed of cork, of which the base, turned towards the earth, is formed of lead.

Hence two essentially distinct natures are found upon the surface of the lunar world, — one without any possible analogy with ours, for fluid and ethereal bodies are unknown to it; the other, relatively analogous to the earth, since all the least dense substances are found upon this hemisphere. The first, perpetually turned towards the earth, is without atmosphere or water; the other, rich in fluids, is perpetually opposed to our world.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This entirely new theory of the moon explains, by the law of gravitation, the reason why this body always turns the same face towards the earth. Its centre of gravity, instead of being in the centre of the sphere, is to be found upon one of the points of its sur-

The number and condition of the satellites of every planet have been varied according to the special conditions of their formation. Some have given birth to no secondary body, — Mercury, Venus, and Mars, for instance; whilst others have formed one or many, like the earth, Jupiter, Saturn, and others. In addition to its satellites, or moons, the planet Saturn presents a special phenomenon of the ring, which seems, seen from afar, to surround it like a white aureole. This formation is to us a new proof of the universality of the laws of nature. This ring is surely the result of a separation which took place in primitive times in the equator of Saturn, just as an equatorial zone has been thrown off from the earth, and formed its satellite. The difference consists in this, that the ring of Saturn was found formed in all its parts of homogeneous molecules, probably already in a certain state of condensation, and enabled in this manner to continue its rotary movement in the same way, and in a time nearly equal, to that which revolves the planet. If one of the points of this ring

face, and, consequently, attracted to the earth by a greater force than are the lighter parts. The moon produces the effect of figures called *Noussahs*, which constantly stand upright upon their base, while the planets, whose centres of gravity are at equal distances from the surface, turn regularly upon their axes. The vivifying fluids, gaseous or liquid, on account of their specific lightness, would be found accumulated in the superior hemisphere constantly opposed to the earth. The inferior hemisphere, the only one we see, must be destitute of them, and consequently incapable of sustaining life, whilst life would reign on the other. If, then, the upper hemisphere be inhabited, its inhabitants have never seen the earth, unless by excursions into the other hemisphere. However rational and scientific this opinion may be, as it has not yet been confirmed by any one direct observation, it can be accepted only as an hypothesis; and as such it serves as a beacon-star to science.



had been denser than another, one or many agglomerations of substance would have been suddenly expelled, and Saturn would have counted many satellites more. Since the time of its formation, this ring has been solidified, as well as the other planetary bodies.

*Comets.* — Wandering stars far more truly than the planets which have received this etymological designation, the comets should be the guides leading us over the limits of the system, to which the earth belongs, carrying us into the far-away regions of sidereal space. But, before exploring by the aid of these travellers of the universe the celestial domains, it will be well for us to become acquainted as much as possible with their intrinsic nature, and their *rôle* in the planetary economy. Men have often seen in these wandering stars growing worlds, elaborating in their primitive chaos conditions of life and existence which are bestowed upon inhabited worlds; others have imagined these extraordinary bodies to be worlds in a state of destruction, and their singular appearance has been made the subject of erroneous opinions concerning their nature. Astrology has taught that they portended coming disasters, and that they were messengers decreed by Divine Providence to warn the astonished and trembling earth.

The law of variety is applied in such great profuseness in the works of nature, that one demands how naturalists, astronomers, or philosophers have invented so many systems in order to liken comets to planetary bodies, and in order to see in them only stars more or less advanced in development or decay. The pictures which nature is ever presenting

ought, however, amply to suffice for the removal from the observer's mind of all search for parallels which do not exist, and leave to the comets the modest but useful *rôle* of wandering stars serving as advance-guards for solar empires; for the celestial bodies are found in many forms other than planetary. Comets have not, like the planets, to fulfil the mission of affording an abiding place for humanity. They travel in successive journeys from sun to sun, enriching themselves sometimes on their route by planetary fragments reduced to a vaporous state, bringing to their focuses the vivifying and renovating principle that they cast upon terrestrial bodies. If one of these bodies should approach our little globe in order to traverse its orbit, and return to its apogee situated at an immeasurable distance from the sun, let us follow it in thought, in order to visit with it the sidereal countries. To do so we must leap over the prodigious expanse of ethereal matter, which separates the sun from the nearest stars; and observing the combined movements of this body, that one could well believe lost in this desert of infinitude, we should find there still an eloquent proof of the universality of nature's laws, which are exercised in distances the extent of which the most fervid imagination can hardly conceive. There the elliptic form is exchanged for the parabolic; and the tail is lessened at the point of transition to only a few yards, while at its perigee it would extend many millions of leagues. Perhaps a more powerful sun, more important than the one it has just quitted, will exert over this comet a greater attraction, and will receive it into the ranks of its own subjects; and then the astonished children

of your little earth will wait in vain for the return they had prognosticated by imperfect observations. In this case, we, whose thought has followed the wandering comet into those unknown regions, will encounter then a new nation never seen before by terrestrial eyes, unimaginable by spirits who inhabit the earth, inconceivable even to their thought; for it will be the theatre of unexplored marvels. We have arrived at the astral world in this brilliant universe of vast suns which shine in infinite space, and which are the brilliant flowers of the magnificent garden of creation. Until we arrive there, we can never know what the earth really is.

*The Milky Way.*—During some beautiful starry, moonless nights, every one has observed this beautiful white light which traverses the heavens from one extremity to the other, and which the ancients have named the “Milky Way” on account of its milky appearance. This diffuse light has long been explored by the aid of the modern telescope; and this road of powdered gold, or this spring of milk of antique mythology, has been transformed into a vast field of unknown wonders. The researches of observers have led to a knowledge of its nature, and have shown that, where the unaided vision could behold only a feeble light, millions of suns more important and larger than that which illumines the earth are to be found. The Milky Way indeed is a country sown with solar or planetary flowers which shine in its vast extent. Our sun and all the bodies accompanying it make a part of these radiant globes of which the Milky Way is composed; but, notwithstanding the sun’s gigantic dimensions relative to the

earth, and the vastness of earth's empire, it occupies, however, only an unappreciable place in this vast creation. One can count thirty millions of similar suns like unto it revolving in this boundless region, removed from one another by distance more than a hundred thousand times as great as that of the terrestrial orbit.<sup>1</sup> One can judge, by this approximation, of the extent of this sidereal region, and of the relation which unites our system to the universal whole of the systems which occupy it. We can thus judge of the comparative smallness of the solar domain, and much more of the infinitesimality of our little earth. How, then, are the people who inhabit it to be considered? When I say diminutiveness of our little earth, our assertions apply not only to its material form and to the physical extent of the bodies which we study, but still more, and above all, to the moral state, to the degree to which they have attained in the universal hierarchy of beings. In this latter phase creation is shown in all its majesty, creating and propagating every thing by the solar world, making manifestations of life and intelligence in each one of the systems which surround it on every side.

One becomes acquainted only in this way with the position occupied by our sun, or by the earth in the starry expanse. These considerations will acquire greater weight still if we reflect that the Milky Way seen from afar represents only an imperceptible and inappreciable point in the immensity of the sidereal creations. Millions like it exist in space. It is a stellar nebulæ. If it appears to us richer and more immense than others, it is for this sole reason that

<sup>1</sup> More than three trillions four hundred billions of leagues.

it surrounds us, and develops itself in its extent under our very eyes; whilst the others, lost in unfathomable depths, are scarcely to be seen.

Now, if one remembers that the earth, comparatively speaking, is nothing or almost nothing in the solar system, that the latter is nothing or nearly nothing in the Milky Way, this latter is nothing or nearly nothing in the universe of nebulæ, and this universe itself a very little thing in the midst of the vastness of infinitude, one will begin to comprehend what the terrestrial globe is.

*The Fixed Stars.* — Those bodies called “fixed stars,” and which constellate the two hemispheres of the firmament, are not isolated from all exterior attraction as is generally supposed; on the contrary, they belong to one and the same agglomeration of stellar bodies. This agglomeration is no other than the nebulæ of which we form a part, the equatorial plane of which as displayed in the sky has received the name of the “Milky Way.” All the suns which compose it are conjointly responsible: their collective influences re-act perpetually upon one another, and universal gravitation re-unites them all in one family.

Among these different suns, the greater number are, like our own, surrounded by secondary worlds, which they illumine and make fruitful by the same laws which preside in the life of our planetary system. Some of them, like Sirius, are thousands of times more magnificent in dimensions and in grandeur than ours, their *rôle* more important in the universe, whilst a very great number of planets very superior to ours surround them. Others are very

dissimilar in their astral functions. Thus a certain number of these suns, veritable twins of the sidereal order, are accompanied by their brothers of the same age, and form in space binary systems, to which nature has given entirely different functions than those which belong to our sun. There the years are measured no more by the same periods, neither are the days measured by the same suns; and these worlds lighted by a double luminary have received a share of conditions of existence unimaginable to those who have not emerged from this little terrestrial globe.

Other stars without attendants, deprived of planets, have received the best elements of habitability which are given to any of them. The laws of nature are diversified in their immensity; and, if unity is the watchword of the universe, infinite variety is no less the eternal attribute.

Notwithstanding the prodigious number of these stars and their systems, notwithstanding the immeasurable distances which separate them, they all belong to the same stellar nebula which the most powerful telescopic vision can scarcely traverse, and which the boldest conceptions of the imagination can scarcely attain unto,—a nebula which, nevertheless, is only a unit in the order of *nebulæ* which compose the astral world.

The stars which they call *fixed* are not immovable in space. The constellations which they have imagined to be in the vault of the firmament are not really symbolical creations. The distance from the earth and the appearance of the universe measured from this station are the two causes of this double optical illusion.

We have seen that the totality of the stars which shine in the azure dome is enclosed in a cosmic agglomeration, in the same *nebulæ* which you call Milky Way; but, although all belong to this same group, all of the stars are no less animated by their own translation movement in space. Absolute repose exists nowhere. They are regulated by the universal laws of gravitation, and roll in space under the incessant impulsion of this immense power. They roll, not in routes traced by chance, but following certain orbits of which the centre is occupied by a superior star. In order to render my words more comprehensible, as an example, I will speak specially of your sun.

One knows, by modern observations, that it is not fixed or central, as they believed it to be in the early days of modern astronomy, but that it advances in space, drawing with it its vast system of planets, satellites, and comets.

Now this march is not casual: it does not wander about in the infinite voids, to be lost far away from the regions assigned to it, its children, and subjects. No: its orbit is measured. Concurrently with other suns of the same order as itself, and surrounded like itself with a certain number of inhabited worlds, it gravitates around a central sun. Its movement of gravitation, the same as that of other suns (its brothers), is inestimable by annual observation; for a great number of earthly centuries would hardly suffice to mark the time of one of these astral years. The central sun, of which we have just spoken, is itself a globe, comparatively speaking, secondary to another still more important one, around which it is

perpetually travelling with a slow and measured march in company with other suns of the same order. We might contemplate this successive subordination of suns to suns till our imaginations were weary with revelling among so vast a hierarchy ; for let us not forget that they can count in round numbers thirty millions of suns in the Milky Way, subordinate to one another, like the gigantic machinery of an immense system.

And these stars, so innumerable, live, each and every one, a conjointly responsible life. For nothing in the economy of your little terrestrial sphere lives a lonely, detached life, which rule extends to the whole boundless universe.

These systems upon systems would appear from afar, to the eye of the philosophical investigator who could comprehend the picture developed by space and time, like pearl and gold dust blown into whirlwinds by the divine breath which makes sidereal worlds fly through the heavens like grains of sand through the desert. More immovability, more silence, more night ! The great spectacle which would then display itself before our eyes would be the real creation, immense and full of that ethereal life which the all-seeing eye of the Creator embraces in its boundless vision. But until now we have spoken only of a nebula. Its millions of suns, its myriads of inhabited earths, form, as we have said before, only an island in the infinite archipelago.

*The Deserts of Space.* — An immense wilderness, without limits, extends beyond the agglomeration of stars, of which we have just spoken, and surrounds it. Solitudes succeed to solitudes, and immeasura-



ble plains extend through the far-reaching expanse. Masses of cosmic matter are found everywhere isolated in space like islands in a vast archipelago. If one can appreciate, in some measure, the enormous distance which separates the mass of stars, of which we form a part, from the collections nearest to them, it is necessary to know that these stellar islands are disseminated sparsely in the vast ocean of the heavens, and that the extent of space dividing them is immeasurably greater than their respective dimensions. Now, we must remember that the stellar nebulæ measure, taken as a unity, a thousand times the distance between the nearest stars; that is to say, some hundred thousand trillions of leagues. The distance between them being much more vast could not be expressed in numbers comprehensible by your minds. The imagination alone, in its highest conceptions, is capable of attaining to this prodigious immensity. These mute solitudes, destitute of all appearance of life, can give one the idea, in some measure, of this relative infinity. This celestial desert, however, which surrounds our sidereal universe, and which appears to extend like the distant confines of our astral world, is overlooked by the infinite power of the Almighty, who, beyond these heavens of our heavens, has developed the woof of his limitless creation.

Beyond these vast solitudes, indeed, worlds radiate in untold magnificence, as well as in regions accessible to human investigation. Beyond these wildernesses splendid oases float in the limpid ether, and incessantly renew beautiful scenes of activity and life. There, in the far-away distance, are displayed aggre-

gations of cosmic substance utterly beyond the range of the telescope through the transparent regions of our heavens. These nebulae that you call stationary, and which appear to you like clouds of white dust lost in the unknown depths of ethereal space, when revealed, develop new worlds, whose strange and varied conditions, when compared with those inherent in your globe, endow them with modes of life of which your imagination cannot conceive, nor your studies explain. There creative power shines resplendently in all its plenitude before him who comes from regions occupied by your system. Other laws are there in activity, whose forces rule the manifestations of life; and the novel routes we follow in these strange regions open up to us unknown perspectives.

*The Eternal Succession of Worlds.*—We have seen that one primordial and general law alone has been given to the universe in order to insure eternal stability, and that this universal law is perceptible to our senses by means of the many modes of operation we call the directing forces of nature. We are going to show to-day that the harmony of the entire universe, considered under the double aspect of eternity and of space, is assured by this supreme law. Indeed, if we go back to the primitive origin or first agglomerations of cosmic substance, we must remark, that, already under the empire of this law, matter is submitted to the necessary transformations which develop from the germ the ripe fruit, and that, under the impulsion of diverse forces born of this law, the earth climbs over the ladder of its periodical revolutions.

At first the fluid centre of motion, generator of worlds, thence the central and attractive nucleus of

spheres which have been cradled on its bosom. We know already that one law presides throughout the history of cosmos. That which it is important for us to know now is, that it presides equally at the destruction of astral bodies; for death is not only a metamorphosis for living beings, but a transformation for inanimate matter. If it is correct to say, in the literal sense, that all life is amenable to the scythe of death, it is also just to add that all substance must of necessity submit to the inherent transformations of its constitution. Here is a world that from its cradle has passed through all the succession of years allotted to it by its special organization. The interior focus of its existence is extinguished: its elements have lost their original virtue. The phenomena of its nature, which claimed for their production the presence and action of forces found in this world, henceforth cannot present themselves, because the lever of their activity can no longer sustain them. Now, what would one think, if this extinguished earth, without life, should continue to gravitate in celestial space without an object, and pass like a useless cinder in the whirlwind of the heavens? Can any of us think it should remain inscribed in the book of universal life when it is only a dead letter denuded of meaning? No: the same laws which have elevated it above the dead chaos, and which have adorned it with the splendors of life, the same forces which have governed it throughout its adolescence, which have supported its first steps in existence, and which have conducted it to a ripe old age, preside at the disintegration of its constituent elements, in order to render it in the

laboratory from which creative power draws unceasingly the means of universal vitality.

These elements return to this common mass of ether in order to assimilate with other bodies, or to help in the formation of other suns. And this death will neither be a useless event to this or to its sister earths. It will renew in other regions other creations of a different nature; and there, where some systems of worlds have vanished, will soon be born a new and more brilliant garden of flowers, more beauteous and fragrant still. Thus the real and effective eternity of the universe is assured by the same laws which direct the operations of time. Thus worlds succeed to worlds, suns to suns, without the immense mechanism of the heavens ever reaching the limit of its gigantic resources. There, where your eyes admire the splendid stars under the vault of night, — there, where your mind contemplates the magnificent radiance, resplendent in far-distant space, — through countless ages, the finger of death has extinguished these splendors. Long ago void has succeeded to this radiance, and received new creations yet unknown. It takes millions of years for the light of these stars to reach us, by reason of their immense distance from us; and the rays that we receive to-day are those that were sent in our direction a long time before the formation of this earth. We continue to admire them long ages after their extinction. What are the six thousand years of historic humanity compared with the measureless ages before them? Seconds to your ages! What are your astronomical observations compared with the actual state of the universe? The shadow eclipsed by the sun.

Here, then, as in our other studies, let us recognize that earth and man are as nothingness compared to that which is; and that the most colossal operations of our minds extend yet only near unto the confines of an immensity and eternity of existence in a universe which can know no end. And when measureless periods in our immortality shall have passed over our heads, when the actual history of the earth will appear to us like a vaporous shadow in the depth of our remembrance, when we shall have inhabited during countless ages all the multiple degrees of our cosmological hierarchy, when the most distant domains shall have in future ages been passed through by innumerable peregrinations, we shall have still before us an unlimited succession of worlds, — an unending eternity for perspective.

*Universal Life.* — This immortality of souls, of which the system of the physical world is the base, has appeared to be imaginary in the eyes of certain thinkers. They have ironically styled it the immortal traveller, and have failed to comprehend that the soul possessed immortal life before this world was made. However, it is possible to make them comprehend all the grandeur of it, — I would say, nearly all the perfection of it. That the works of God are created for thought and intelligence, that the worlds are the abodes of beings who contemplate them, and who discover under their veil the power and wisdom of Him who formed them, is no longer doubtful to us; but that the souls who people them are harmoniously linked together is what is important for us to understand. Human intelligence, indeed, does not really take in the existence of these radiant

globes which scintillate in space as simple masses of inert matter without life. It scarcely dreams that there are in these far-distant regions magnificent twilights and splendid nights, fruitful suns and days full of light, valleys and mountains where the multiple productions of nature have been developed in all their luxuriant pomp, and that a realm so admirably adapted to the unfoldment of every potency of the soul should remain forever destitute of conscious life. But to this eminently just idea of creation it is necessary to add that of the unity of humanity; and it is in this that the mystery of the future exists. One and the same human family has been created throughout the universe of worlds; and the ties of a fraternity yet unappreciated on your part bind you to these worlds, and they to you.

If these astral bodies which harmonize in their vast systems are inhabited by intelligences, it is not by beings unknown to one another, but by beings marked in the forehead with the same destiny, who need to encounter one another for the discharge of their functions of life, which cannot be discharged apart from their mutual sympathies. There is one great family of spirits peopling the celestial worlds. There is one grand radiance of the eternal spirit embracing the expanse of the boundless universe, and which remains as a primal and final type of spiritual perfection. By what strange aberration could we refuse belief in the immortality of the vast regions of ether, and limit all to an absolute duality?

Ought not, then, the true system of the universe to precede dogmatic doctrine proclaimed as true either in science or theology? Will not one be always con-

fused when the base of his assumptions is purely metaphysical? The reply is readily given, and shows us that the new philosophy will be triumphantly enthroned upon the ruins of the old, because its base will be victoriously elevated above ancient errors.

*Science.* — Human intelligence has elevated its powerful conceptions above the limits of space and time. It has penetrated into the inaccessible domain of antique ages, sounded the mysteries of the incomprehensible skies, explains the enigma of creation. The exterior world has unfolded to the eye of science its splendid panorama and its magnificent opulence, and the studies of man have elevated it to the knowledge of truth. It has explored the universe, finding the expression of laws which govern it, and the application of forces which sustain it; and, if it has not been vouchsafed to it to come face to face with the First Cause, at least it has come to the mathematical idea of a series of secondary causes. More particularly in this last century the experimental method — that which alone is truly scientific — has been put in practice in the natural sciences; and by its aid man has been successively despoiled of the prejudices of the ancient schools and of speculative theories, exchanging these for a field of observation which he may cultivate with care and intelligence. Yes, human science is solid and fruitful, worthy of our homage by reason of its difficult and long-tried past, worthy of our sympathies for its future, great with useful and profitable discoveries; for nature is henceforth a book accessible to the researches of studious man, — a world open to the investigations of the thinker, as brilliant a region as the human spirit

has ever visited, and in which he can boldly advance, holding in his hand experience as a guide.

An old friend of my terrestrial life spoke to me thus. We had together made a peregrination to the earth, and we studied with a new moral light this world. My companion remarked, that man is to-day familiar with the most abstract laws of mechanics, of physics, of chemistry; that the applications of industry are not less remarkable than the deductions of pure science; and that the wise study of the entire creation appeared henceforth to be his royal privilege. And, as we pursued our march away from this world, I replied to him in these terms: This feeble atom, man, lost in an imperceptible point of infinitude, has imagined that he could embrace the universe with his eye, when he could scarcely understand the special region he inhabited. He has believed that he could study the laws of entire nature, when his appreciations had hardly reached to the forces immediately surrounding himself. He has thought he could determine the grandeur of the heavens, when he could not analyze a grain of dust. The field of his observations is so immense, that the boundaries are necessarily invisible. Mind scarcely comprehends itself. The heaven and the earth of man are so small, that the soul in its essence has not the time to unfold its wing on earth before its translation to other spheres. The immeasurable universe surrounds us on all sides, opening up beyond our skies unknown riches, putting in play unappreciable forces, developing modes of existence inconceivable by us, and propagating splendor and life in infinitude.



The flesh-worm, miserable insect, without wings or light, whose sad existence is consumed upon the leaf which gave it birth, might pretend that, because it makes some steps upon this leaf agitated by the wind, it has the right to talk about the immense tree to which it belongs, — a tree whose shadow it has scarcely seen. He might foolishly imagine himself able to reason about the forest of which his tree was a part, and reason wisely about the nature of the vegetables developed there, of the beings which inhabited it, of the far-away sun, whose rays sometimes descend to carry thither movement and life. In truth, man would be strangely pretentious to wish to measure infinite grandeur at the feet of his infinite littleness! Ought he not to be thoroughly permeated with this idea, that, if the arduous labors of centuries have acquired for him his first knowledge of things, if progression of mind has placed him in the vestibule of knowledge, yet he has only learned to spell the first page of the book; that he is like a child hesitating at each word, and, far from pretending to doctrinally interpret the work, ought to humbly content himself with studying it, page by page, line by line? Happy are those who can still do it.

*Moral Considerations.* — You have followed us in our celestial excursions, and you have visited with us the immense regions of space. We have seen suns succeed to suns, systems to systems, nebulæ to nebulæ. The splendid harmonious panorama of cosmos has been unfolded before our eyes, and we have received a foretaste of the idea of infinitude, which we can comprehend in all its extent only in a future state of perfection. The mysteries of ether have

unveiled their secret hitherto incomprehensible, and we have conceived at least an idea of the universality of things. It is important now to pause and reflect.

It is well, without doubt, to have recognized the smallness of the earth, and its mediocre importance in the hierarchy of worlds. It is wise to have lowered the human arrogance so dear to us, and to have become humiliated in the presence of absolute grandeur; but it will be much more satisfactory to interpret with the moral sense the spectacle to which we have been witnesses. I desire to speak of the infinite power of nature, and of the idea which we ought to form of its mode of action in the diverse extents of the universe. Habituated, as we are, to judge of things by our poor little sojourn here, we imagine that nature has not been able to act, or ought not to act in other worlds, except in accordance with the rules which we have recognized here below. Now it is precisely in this respect that it is important to reform our judgment. Cast your eyes upon any region whatsoever of your globe, and upon any one of the productions of its nature. Do you not recognize there the seal of an infinite variety, and the proof of an unequalled activity? Do you not see upon the wing of the little canary-bird, upon the petals of an opening rosebud, the fascinating fecundity of this beautiful nature? When your studies are applied to the winged beings which cleave the air,—when they descend to the violet of the woods, to the depths of the ocean,—in all and everywhere you read this universal truth: All-powerful Nature acts according to place, time, and circum-

stances. She is a unit in her general harmony, but a multiple in her productions; she handles a sun as a drop of water; she peoples an immense world with living beings, with the same facility as she opens the egg deposited by the autumn insect. Now, if such is the variety that Nature has been able to depict in all places on this little world, so narrow, so limited, what can you imagine is that of her larger worlds, so great in extent, which far more fully than the earth attest her unknown perfection? Do you not then see, around each one of the suns in space, systems similar to your planetary system? But you do not see that these planets support the three kingdoms of nature which develop around you. For, as no two human faces are exactly similar, this same prodigious, unimaginable variety has been displayed in the abodes of ether which float on the breasts of space.

Since animated nature commences with the zoöphyte and ends with man, since the atmosphere feeds terrestrial life, since the liquid element is incessantly renewed, since your seasons are succeeded in this life by the phenomena which divide them, do not conclude that the millions on millions of worlds which roll in space are similar to this: far from it. They differ according to the diverse conditions which have been developed on them, and according to their respective *rôles* in the drama of the universe: they are varied gems in an immense mosaic, diversified flowers in a superb garden.

## CHAPTER VII.

GEOLOGICAL OUTLINE OF THE EARTH. — GEOLOGICAL PERIODS. — PRIMITIVE STATE OF THE GLOBE. — PRIMARY PERIOD. — TRANSITION PERIOD. — SECONDARY PERIOD. — TERTIARY PERIOD. — DILUVIAN PERIOD. — POST-DILUVIAN PERIOD. — BIRTH OF MAN.

*Geological Periods.* — The earth carries within it the evident traces of its formation. One can follow the phases of it with a mathematical precision in the different rocks which compose its framework. The whole of these studies constitute the science of geology, a science born of this century, and which has thrown light upon the much controverted question of its origin, and of that of the living beings which inhabit it. Here there is no point upon which one can hang an hypothesis. It is the rigorous result of the observation of facts, and into the presence of facts doubt is forbidden to enter. A history of the formation of the globe is written in the geological beds of the earth in a clearer manner than in books hitherto written, because it is Nature herself who speaks, pointing to the reason and senses, and not the imagination of men, which has created systems.

Where one sees the traces of fire, one can say with certitude that fire has existed; where those of water are seen, one says with no less certainty that water has been there; where one sees those of animals, one

infers that animals have lived there. Geology is therefore a science of observation: it draws conclusions only from that which it sees. Upon doubtful points it affirms nothing. It utters only debatable opinions concerning phenomena, of which the definite solution awaits more complete observations. Without the discoveries of geology, as well as those of astronomy, the genesis of the world would still lie in legendary shadows. Thanks to it to-day, man knows the history of his habitation; and the trelliswork of fables which surrounded his cradle is crushed, never to rise again. Everywhere where stony cavities exist, natural excavations, or apertures opened by man, one observes that which is called stratifications, or superposed beds. The rocks which present this phase are designated stratified rocks.

These beds, of a very variable thickness, sometimes of only a few hundred inches, sometimes a hundred yards and more, are distinguished from one another by the color and nature of the substances of which they are composed.

Works of art, the boring of wells, the exploding of quarries, and, above all, mines, have given the means of observation to a considerable depth. The beds are generally homogeneous; that is to say, that each one is formed of a similar substance, or of diverse substances which have co-existed, and have formed a compact whole. The line of separation isolating them from one another is always distinctly defined as in the different parts of a ship. No part is seen mingled or lost in another: each remains within its own respective limits. Such is the case, for example, in the colors of the prism or the rainbow. By

these characters, observers decide that they have been successively formed, deposited upon one another by different causes and conditions. The deepest have naturally been formed first, and those nearest the surface subsequently. The last of all, that which is found on the surface, is the bed of vegetable which owes its properties to the destruction of organic matter which produces plants and animals. The lower beds, placed under the vegetable, have received in geology the name of rocks, a word which in this acceptation implies, not always the idea of a stony substance, but signifies a resting-place of some mineral substance. Some are formed of sand, of clay or loam, of chalk or pebbles; others of stones, properly speaking, of greater or lesser hardness, such as sandstone, marbles, chalk, limestone, millstone, coals of the earth, asphalt. They say that the power of a rock depends upon its thickness. By the inspection of the nature of these rocks or beds, one recognizes, by certain signs, that they are produced by heated substances sometimes vitrified by the action of fire. Other terrestrial substances are deposited by water. Some of these substances have remained disintegrated, as sand; others at first in a pasty state, under the action of certain chemical agents or other causes, have become hardened, and have acquired in time the consistence of stone. Superposed stony beds show successive deposits. Fire and water have then played their parts in the formation of the materials composing the solid framework of the globe.

The normal position of terrestrial or stony beds producing aqueous deposits is horizontal. When one sees these immense plains, often extending as far

as the eye can see in a perfectly horizontal line, united as if levelled by a roller, or depths of valleys as smooth as the surface of a lake, one can be certain that at some distant epoch these places have been for a long time covered by tranquil waters, which, in retiring, have left the beds dry upon which they were deposited during their sojourn. After the retreats of the waters, these beds have become covered with vegetation. If in place of fertile, muddy clay or chalky earths, which afford nourishment for soil, the waters had deposited only silicious sand without aggregation, we should find here dry and sandy plains constituting waste lands and deserts. The deposits left by partial inundations, and those which form the alluvium at the mouth of rivers, give us a faint idea of this. Although the horizontal is the most normal and usual position of these aqueous formations, one sees, often to a considerable extent in mountainous districts, rocks, which indicate by their nature that they were formed by water in an inclined, and sometimes even in a vertical, position. Now, as according to the laws of the equilibrium of liquids and weights, the aqueous deposits can be formed exclusively upon horizontal planes, it is therefore supposed that those which rest on inclined planes are drawn into the lower depths by currents, and by their own weight. It is evident that these deposits have been raised by some force, after their solidification and transformation into stone. From these considerations we can conclude with certitude that all these stony beds composed of aqueous deposits, in a perfectly horizontal position, have been formed during the succession of ages by tranquil

waters; and that, whenever they are found in an inclined position, the earth has been violently agitated and subsequently broken up by general or partial earthquakes of more or less importance. A characteristic fact of the highest importance for the unexceptionable testimony it furnishes, consists in fossil remains of vegetables and animals encountered in innumerable varieties in the different beds; and, as these remains are even found in the hardest stones, it is necessary to conclude that the existence of these beings antedates the formation of these stones. Now, if we consider how many centuries must have been spent in this hardening process, which has eventually brought them to the condition in which they have been from time immemorial, one is forced to the conclusion, that the time of the advent of organized beings upon the earth is lost in the night of unknown ages, and that it is consequently very far behind the dates assigned by Genesis.<sup>1</sup>

Among these vegetable and animal fossils are those which have been penetrated throughout by silicious

<sup>1</sup> Fossil, from the Latin *fossilia* and *fossilis*, derived from *fossa*, "ditch," and from *fodere*, "to dig or plough the earth." This word is used in geology to signify bodies, or the remains of organized bodies, belonging to creatures who lived in prehistoric times. It is equally applied to mineral substances bearing traces of the presence of organized beings, such as the imprints of vegetables or of animals. The word "fossil," in a more general acceptation, has been substituted for that of petrification, which applies only to bodies transformed into stone by the infiltration of silicious or calcareous substances in the organic tissues. All the petrifications are necessarily fossils, but all fossils are not petrifications. The formations with which stony beds are covered, when they are plunged into waters charged with calcareous substances, are not, properly speaking, petrifications, but simple incrustations. Monuments, inscriptions, and other objects produced by human effort belong to the science of archaeology.



or calcareous substances, which have transformed them into stone, of which some have the hardness of marble: these, properly speaking, are petrifications. Others have simply been enveloped by matter in a soft state, and a few of them are found in a perfect state in the hardest stones. Others have left only imprints, but of a distinct and perfect delicacy. In the interior of certain stones the imprint of feet have been discovered, also the form of fingers and nails, from which it is concluded that some animal has produced them.

The animal fossils are but little comprehended. One finds sometimes the solid and resisting parts, such as bones, scales, and horns. Sometimes these are complete skeletons, but more frequently only detached portions, of which it is easy to recognize the production. By the inspection of a jaw or a tooth, one sees immediately whether it belongs to a herbivorous or carnivorous animal. As all the parts of an animal have a necessary correlation, the form of the head, of a shoulder-blade, of a bone of the leg, or a foot, suffices to determine the size, the general form, and the mode of life of the animal.<sup>1</sup>

The terrestrial animals have an organism clearly separating them from aquatic animals. Fish and shell-fish fossils are excessively numerous; shell-fish alone sometimes forming entire beds of great thickness. By their nature, one quickly determines whether they are marine or fresh-water animals.

<sup>1</sup> At the point to which George Cuvier has carried the science of paleontology, one bone alone suffices often to determine the race, species, and form of an animal, also its habits, by which it can be entirely reconstructed.

The masses of pebble-stone rock, which in certain places constitute important phenomena, are unequivocal indication of their origin. They are rounded like the pebble-stones on the seashore, an unmistakable sign that they have been subjected to the effects of waters. The countries where they are found buried in large quantities have most certainly once lain under violently agitated waters.

Rocks of diverse formations are also characterized by the nature of the fossils they enclose. The most ancient ones contain vegetable and animal remains, which have entirely disappeared from off the surface of the globe. Certain more recent species have as completely disappeared, but have preserved an analogy, which differs only in size and slightly in form. Others, of which we see the last representations, are tending evidently to disappearance in a near future, such as the elephant, rhinoceros, hippopotamus, etc. According as the terrestrial beds approach our epoch, the animal and vegetable species they contain approach those animals and vegetables which still exist. The perturbations and inundations which have taken place upon the earth since its origin have completely changed the conditions of vitality, and have made entire generations of living beings disappear.

By interrogating the nature of the geological beds, one knows in the most positive manner if, at the epoch of their formation, the country which encloses them was occupied by the sea, by lakes, or by forests and plains peopled with terrestrial animals. If, then, in the same country one finds a series of superposed beds containing alternately marine and fresh-water fossils many times repeated, it is an unexceptionable

proof that this same country has been many times encompassed by the sea, covered by lakes, and become dry again. And how many centuries upon centuries certainly, thousands of centuries perhaps, has it required to accomplish each period of this? What a powerful force must have been required to displace and replace the ocean, to raise mountains! How many physical revolutions, violent commotions, the earth has passed through before becoming what it has been through historic ages! and they try to make us believe that the formation of the earth took less time than is necessary to propagate a plant.

The study of the geological beds attests, as has previously been stated, to successive formations, which have gradually changed the form of the globe, and divided its history into many epochs. These epochs constitute that which is called geologic periods, the knowledge of which is necessary to establish a true Genesis. Geologists count six principal periods, which they have designated as follows: first the primary, second the transition, third the secondary, fourth the tertiary, fifth the diluvian, sixth the post-diluvian or present period. Rocks formed during the duration of each period are called thus: primitive, transition, secondary rocks, etc. One says that such and such rocks, such and such fossils, are found in rocks of such and such periods.

It is essential to remark, that the number of these periods is not absolute, and that it depends upon system of classification. One does not comprehend, in the six principal periods designated above, all which are marked by notable and general

change in the state of the globe; but observation proves that many successive formations have been produced during the history of each. That is why they are divided into periods, characterized by the nature of the rocks, which bear twenty-six general and very characteristic formations, without counting those which are produced by modifications due to purely local causes.

*Primitive State of the Globe.* — The depression of the poles and other conclusive facts are certain indications that the earth has been originally in a fluid or soft state. This state could have been caused by matter having been liquefied by fire or softened by water. It is proverbially said, "There is no smoke without fire." This true proverb is an application of the principle, "There is no effect without a cause." For the same reason one can say, "There is no fire without a focus." Now, by facts which pass under our eyes, there is not only smoke produced, but also very real fire which must have a focus. This fire coming from the interior of the earth, and not from on high, the focus must be within; the fire being permanent, the focus must be equally so, — the heat which is augmented by measure as it penetrates the interior of the earth, and which at a certain distance from the surface attains a very high temperature; the hot springs, so much warmer according to the depth from which they come. Fires and masses of heated and burning substances, which escape from volcanoes with vast upheavings, or by crevasses produced by earthquakes, can leave no doubt concerning the existence of an interior fire.

Experience demonstrates that the temperature has been raised one degree by every thirty yards of depth: whence it follows that at a depth of three hundred yards the augmentation is ten degrees; at three thousand yards, one hundred degrees, a temperature of boiling water; at thirty thousand yards, seven to eight leagues (from twenty-one to twenty-four miles), one thousand degrees; at twenty-five leagues (seventy-five miles), more than thirty-three hundred degrees, a temperature at which no known material can resist fusion. From there to the centre there is still a space of more than fourteen hundred leagues (forty-two hundred miles), may be twenty-eight hundred leagues (eighty-four hundred miles), in diameter, which must be occupied by molten substances. Although this is only a conjecture judging cause by effect, it has all the elements of probability; and one arrives at this conclusion, that the earth is still an incandescent mass covered with a solid crust twenty-five or more leagues (seventy-five miles) in thickness, which is scarcely the one hundred and twentieth part of its diameter. Proportionally speaking, it must be much thinner than the thinnest rind of an orange. For the rest, the thickness of the terrestrial crust is very variable in many places; for there are some countries, especially volcanic territories, where the heat and flexibility of the soil indicate that it is much thinner. The high temperature of hot springs is also an indication of close vicinity to the central fire.

It is then evident that the primitive state of the softness or fluidity of the earth must have been caused by the action of heat, not by water. The

earth was then originally an incandescent mass. In consequence of the caloric rays, it became liquefied. It has been gradually cooled, and the cooling process has naturally commenced on the surface, which has become hardened, whilst the interior has remained in a fluid state. One can thus compare the earth to a block of coal coming red from the furnace, the surface cooling by contact with the air, although, if one breaks it, the interior is found to be yet burning.

At the epoch when the terrestrial globe was an incandescent mass, it contained not one atom more or less than it does to-day. Only under the influence of this high temperature, the greater part of the substances composing it, and which we see under the forms of liquids and solids, earths, stones, metals, and crystals, were found in a very different state. They have only been submitted to a transformation. In consequence of the cooling process and mixtures, the elements have formed new combinations. The air, considerably inflated, became extended to an immeasurable distance. All the water forcibly reduced to vapor was mingled with the air. All the substances susceptible of volatilization — such as metals, sulphur, carbon — were there found in a gaseous state. The state of the atmosphere was then in no way comparable with its present condition. The density of all these vapors gave it an opacity through which no ray of sunlight could penetrate. If a living being could have existed on the earth at this period, he would have had for light only the sinister brightness of the fires beneath his feet, and the burning atmosphere.

*The Primary Period.* — The first effect of the cooling process was to solidify the outermost surface of the melted mass, and to form there a resisting crust, which, thin at first, little by little thickened. This crust constitutes the stone called “granite,” of an extreme hardness, named thus by reason of its granulated appearance. The three principal substances found there are felspar, quartz or crystal rock, and mica. This last has a brilliant metallic tint, although it is not a metal. The granite-bed is, then, the first ever formed upon the globe, which it entirely envelops, and of which it constitutes in some sort the bony framework. It is the direct product of melted matter consolidated. Upon it and in the cavities that its violently agitated surface presented are successively deposited the beds of other rocks subsequently formed. That which distinguishes this from later formations is the absence of all stratification; that is to say, it is in its whole extent a compact and uniform mass, and not divided by different kinds of beds. The effervescence of incandescent substances must have produced numerous and profound crevasses through which this substance was expelled.

The second effect of the cooling process was to liquefy certain vaporous substances in the air, which were precipitated to the surface of the ground. There were then showers and lakes of sulphur and bitumen, veritable streams of iron, lead, and other heated metals infiltrating themselves into the fissures which constitute to-day the metallic veins and arteries of the earth. Under the influence of these different agents the granite surface experienced successive de-

compositions. Combinations were formed which resulted in primitive rocks distinct from the granite rocks, but in confused masses, and without regular stratifications. Then came the waters, which, falling upon a burning soil, vaporized anew, fell again and again in torrents until the soil permitted them to rest upon it in a liquid state. At the formation of the granite rocks the regular series of geologic periods commence. To the six principal periods it is proper to add that of the primitive incandescent state of the globe.

Such was the aspect of this first period, — a veritable chaos of all the elements mingled together seeking their position where no living being could possibly exist, as one of its distinctive characters in geology at this time is the absence of all traces of vegetable and animal life. It is impossible to decide upon the duration of this primary period: no more can we of the following. But, judging from the time necessary for a cannon-ball of given volume heated to the red-white heat to become sufficiently cool to allow of a drop of water resting upon it in a liquid state, it has been calculated, that, if this cannon-ball were of the magnitude of the earth, more than one million years would be necessary.

*Transition Period.* — At the commencement of the transition period the solid granite crust had thickened only a little, and offered but a feeble resistance to the effervescence of the burning substance which it covered and repressed. Numerous rents were made, by means of which the interior land was thrown out. The soil presented considerable inequalities of surface. Waters not very deep covered nearly all the



surface of the globe, with the exception of elevated lands formed of rocks frequently submerged at their base. The air gradually became purged from the heavier gaseous substances, which, while condensing by the cooling process, were precipitated to the surface of the ground, then drawn into and dissolved by the waters. At this epoch it is necessary to understand this word in a relative sense; that is to say, in connection with the primitive state: for the temperature must have still been burning. The thick aqueous vapors which were raised on all sides from the immense liquid surface fell in abundant and warm rains, obscuring the air. Soon, however, the rays of the sun began to shine through this foggy atmosphere. One of the last substances of which the air has been purged, because it is naturally in a gaseous state, is carbonic-acid gas, which then formed one of its constituent parts. At this epoch beds of earthy sediment began to form, deposited by waters charged with lime and other matters peculiar to organic life. Then appeared the first living beings of the vegetable and animal kingdoms. At first few in number, one finds more and more frequent traces of such as one penetrates more and more deeply into the beds of this formation. It is to be remarked, that everywhere life is manifested so soon as conditions are propitious to vitality, and that each species is born so soon as the proper conditions of its existence are produced. One may say that the germs were latent, and only awaited proper conditions for unfoldment.

The first organized existences which appeared upon the earth were vegetables of the least complicated

organization, designated in botany under the names of cryptogams, acotyledonous plants and monocotyledonous plants, such as lichens, mushrooms, mosses, ferns, and herbaceous plants. One does not now see trees with woody trunks, but only those of the palm species, whose sponge-like trunks are analogous to the stems of herbs. The animals of this period, which have succeeded to the first vegetation, are exclusively marine. These were at first polyps, radiates, zoöphytes, animals whose rudimentary and simple organizations approach most nearly to vegetable forms. Later came fishes and shell-fish, the species of which do not exist now.

Under the empire of heat and humidity an excess of carbonic-acid gas was expended in the air, — a gas improper to the respiration of terrestrial animals, but necessary to plants. The uncovered rocks were rapidly covered with luxuriant vegetation, while at the same time aquatic plants multiplied on the surface of marshes. Plants, which in our day are simple herbs a few inches high, attained a prodigious height and magnitude: there were then forests of tree-like ferns from eight to ten yards in height, and of proportionate magnitude; plants called wolfsfoot, and a kind of moss of the same size, a marsh-plant called horse-tail, four or five yards high, which we hardly see now. At the end of this period pines or fir-trees began to appear.

In consequence of the displacement of the waters, the grounds which produced these masses of vegetation were many times submerged, covered again with terrestrial sediment, during which those which had become dry appeared in their turn with a similar

vegetation: thus there were many successive generations of vegetables destroyed and renewed again. The animals being aquatic suffered nothing from these changes. These remains accumulated during a long series of years, and formed beds of great thickness. Under the action of heat, of humidity, of pressure, exercised by subsequent terrestrial deposits, and, without doubt, also various chemical agents, such as gas, acids, and salts, products of a combination of primitive elements, these vegetable substances were submitted to a fermentation converting them into coal. The coal-mines are, then, the direct result of the decomposition of a mass of vegetables accumulated during the transition period. That is why they are found in almost every country.<sup>1</sup>

The fossil remains of the luxuriant vegetation of this epoch are being discovered to-day under the ice of the polar regions, as well as in the torrid zone: therefore it is necessary to conclude, that, since vegetation was uniform, the temperature also must have been equally so. The poles were then not covered with ice as now: then the earth drew its heat from itself, from the central fire which equally heated all the solid bed, then too thin to offer to it successful resistance. This heat was much greater than that conveyed by the solar rays, enfeebled as they were by the density of the atmosphere. Later on, when the central heat could exert only a feeble influence upon the surface, did that of the sun preponderate;

<sup>1</sup> Turf is produced in the same manner by the decomposition of vegetable matter in marshy grounds; but with this difference, being much more recent and formed under different conditions, it has not had time to carbonize.

and the polar regions, receiving only oblique rays giving very little heat, became covered with ice. One understands that at the epoch of which we speak, and for a long time after, ice was unknown upon the earth. This period has been a very long one, judging from the number and thickness of the coal-beds.<sup>1</sup>

*Secondary Period.* — With the transition period the colossal vegetation and animals which characterized this period passed away. Perhaps it was caused by a change in atmospheric conditions, or on account of inundations having destroyed all which had life on the earth. It is probable that the two causes have contributed to this change; for, by a study of the rocks which mark the end of this period, we find signs of great earthquakes, upheavings, and eruptions which have thrown upon the earth great quantities of lava, also notable changes which have appeared in the three kingdoms.

The secondary period is characterized, as regards the mineral kingdom, by numerous and important beds, which attest a slow formation in the waters, and mark very different characteristic epochs. Vegetation is less rapid and colossal in growth than in the preceding period, caused no doubt by the diminution in heat and humidity, and by modifications experienced by the constitutive elements of the atmosphere. To herbaceous and pulpy plants were

<sup>1</sup> In the Bay of Fundy (Nova Scotia), M. Lyell found, upon a coal-bed four hundred yards in thickness, sixty-eight different levels, presenting evident traces of many forest soils, the trunks of the trees of which were still garnished with their roots. Supposing that it takes one thousand years to form each of these levels, it must have taken sixty-eight thousand years to form this coal-bed alone.

joined those with woody stalks and, properly speaking, also the first trees.

Animals are still aquatic or amphibious at this time; animal life upon the earth seeming to have made but little progress. A great quantity of shell-covered animals have been developed in the seas by the formation of calcareous substances; also new fishes of a more perfect organization than those of the previous period have appeared, also the first of the whale tribe. The most characteristic animals of this period are monstrous reptiles, among which are found the *ichthyosaurus*, a species of lizard-fish, which attained ten yards in length, the jaws of which, being of a prodigious length, were armed with one hundred and eighty teeth. Its general form was a little like the crocodile, but without the scaly breastplate; its eyes were as large as the head of a man; it had fins like the whales, and spouted water into the air like them. The *plesiosaurus* was another marine animal, as large as the *ichthyosaurus*, the excessively long neck of which was bent like that of the swan, which gave to it the appearance of an enormous serpent attached to the body of a turtle or tortoise. It had the head of a lizard and the teeth of a crocodile. Its skin must have been smooth; for no trace of scales, or carapaces, have been found.<sup>1</sup> The *teleosaurus* approaches nearer the actual crocodiles, which appear to be the diminutive descendants of it. Like them it had a scaly breastplate, and lived at times upon the earth as well as in the water. Its body was about ten yards in length, allowing three or four for the head alone. Its enormous mouth had an aperture two yards in length.

<sup>1</sup> First fossil was discovered in 1823.

The *megalosaurus* was a great lizard and a kind of crocodile from fourteen to fifteen yards in length, essentially carnivorous, nourishing itself with reptiles, small crocodiles, and tortoises. Its formidable jawbone was armed with teeth like a double-bladed pruning or garden knife bent round behind in such a way, that, once having entered into their prey, it was impossible for the latter to disengage themselves.

The *iguanodon* (guana), the largest lizard which had appeared upon the earth, measured from twenty to twenty-five yards from the head to the extremity of the tail. Its snout was surmounted by a horn formed of bone, similar to the guana of our day, from which it seems to have differed only in size; the latter having a body not a yard in length. The form of the teeth prove that it was herbivorous, and the feet that it was a land animal.

The *pterodactyl*, a strange animal of the size of a swan, being like a reptile in body, with the head of a bird. Its toes, which were of a prodigious length, were united with a fleshy membrane like that of the bat, which served it as a parachute when it precipitated itself from the height of a tree or rock upon its prey. It had no horny beak like birds; but the jawbones were as long as half its body, and were garnished with teeth terminating in a point like a beak.

During this period, which must have been very long, as the number and importance of the geological beds attest, animal life developed largely in the watery elements, in like manner to vegetation in a previous period. The purer air, more conducive to respiration, permits some animals to live upon the

earth. The sea has been many times displaced, but without violent commotion. With this period disappeared in their turn those races of gigantic aquatic animals, replaced later by analogous species, less disproportionate in form, and of infinitely smaller size.

Pride has influenced man to say, that all animals were created for his purposes and for his needs. But what is the number of those which directly serve him, which he has been able to subject, compared to the incalculable number of those with which he has never had and will never have any connection? How is it possible to sustain a similar thesis in presence of these innumerable species which alone have populated the earth for thousands and thousands of centuries before he came here himself, and which have disappeared? Can one say that they have been created for his profit? However, these species all had their utility in life. God would not create them for nought in order to give himself the pleasure of destroying them; for all had life, instincts, and the capacity for misery and happiness. What then was the object? It must have been a sovereignly wise one, though we are still unable to comprehend it. Perhaps the secret will one day be given to man, in order to humble his pride; but in the mean time how many ideas crowd upon us in presence of these new horizons into which we are permitted to gaze, and which display to us the imposing spectacle of this creation, so majestic in its slow and mighty developments, so admirable in its foresight, so punctual, precise, and invariable in its results!

*Tertiary Period.* — With the tertiary period com-

mences for the earth a new order of things. The aspect of its surface is completely changed; the conditions of vitality are profoundly modified, and approach the present state of the earth. The first part of this period is signalized by an arrest in animal and vegetable productions. Every thing bears traces of an almost entire destruction of living beings, and then appeared successively new species, the better organization of which is adapted to the locality where they are called to live.

During preceding periods the solid crust of the globe, by reason of its thinness, presented, as has been said, a pretty feeble resistance to the action of the internal fire. This envelope, easily broken, permitted melted substances to be freely expelled to the surface of the earth. After having acquired a certain thickness, this did not take place. Burning substances compressed on all sides, like boiling water in a closed vessel, would end in an explosion. The granite mass, violently broken at many points, was furrowed with crevasses. Upon the line of these crevasses the solid crust was raised and reformed, formed peaks, chains of mountains, and their ramifications. Certain parts of the envelope which were not rent were simply piled up, whilst upon other points excavations and depressions were produced. The surface of the earth became then very unequal. The waters, which until this time had covered in a nearly uniform manner the greater part of its extent, flowed down into the lowest places, leaving vast continents of dry land, or summits of isolated mountains, which formed islands.

Such is the great phenomenon which has been



accomplished in the tertiary period, and which has transformed the aspect of the globe. It was not produced instantaneously or simultaneously at all points, but successively at epochs more or less remote from one another.

One of the first consequences of these upheavings has been, as has been said, the inclination of the primitively horizontal beds of sediment, and which have remained everywhere in this horizontal position where the soil has not been overthrown.

In countries where the beds of sediment have preserved their horizontal position, in order to reach that of the first formation, it is necessary to pass through all the others, often to a great depth, at the end of which one invariably finds the granite rock. But, when these beds have been elevated into mountains, they have been carried above their normal level, sometimes to a very great height, in such a way, that, if one makes a vertical trench upon the side of the mountain, they are shown in all their thickness, superposed like the different layers of a building. This explains why quite large beds of marine-shell fossils are often found on high elevations of land. It has been generally recognized that at no epoch the sea has been able to attain such a height; for all the water on the earth is not sufficient for it, and would not be even were it a hundred times greater in volume. Some might say that the quantity of water had diminished; but then the query would come, What had become of it?

The upheavals which are now incontestably demonstrated by science explain completely and logically the marine desposits which are found upon certain

mountains. These beds have evidently been submerged during many ages, but on their primitive level, not on the sites they now occupy. It is absolutely as though a portion of the bottom of a lake were found raised twenty-five or thirty yards above the surface of the water. The summit of this elevation would carry the remains of plants and animals formerly found in the depths of the water. This would not imply that the waters of the lake ever attained to this height.

In places where the upheaval of the primitive rock has produced a complete rent in the soil, perhaps by its rapidity, perhaps by form, height, or volume of the raised mass, the granite has appeared bare like a tooth which pierces the gums; the beds which were covered, elevated, upheaved, and recovered have been brought to life; whilst rocks belonging to the most ancient formations, and which were found in their primitive position at a great depth, form now the soil of certain countries.

The granite mass, dislodged by the effect of earthquakes, has left in some places fissures through which the melted substances have escaped. The volcanoes are like chimneys to this immense furnace, or better still, like escape-valves, which, in providing an exit for the great excess of burning substances, preserve them from terrible commotions, whence one can infer that a large number of active volcanoes is a source of safety to the whole earth. One can form an idea of the intensity of this fire by learning how volcanoes opened in the midst of an ocean are not extinguished by the immense waters which cover and penetrate them. The upheavings of the earth in

one solid mass have necessarily displaced the waters which have flowed back into hollow places, become deeper by the uprising of emerged rocks and by depressions; but these same low depths have been raised in their turn sometimes in one place, sometimes in another, and have repelled the waters, which have flowed elsewhere successively until they have found a stable resting-place. The successive displacements of this liquid mass have violently agitated the surface of the earth. The waters, in passing away, have drawn portions of rocks of anterior formation, brought to light by the earthquakes; denuded mountains which were recovered, and brought to light their granite or calcareous base. Deep valleys have been hollowed out, and others filled in. There are, then, mountains formed directly by the action of the central fire: they are principally granite mountains. Others are due to the action of the waters, which, in drawing mellow earth and soluble matters after them, have hollowed out valleys around a calcareous or other resisting base. The substances drawn by running waters have formed the beds of the tertiary period, which are easily distinguished from the preceding ones less by their composition, which is nearly the same, than by their disposition.

The beds of the primary, transition, and secondary periods, formed upon a slightly undulating surface, are nearly uniform over all the earth. Those of the tertiary period, to the contrary, formed upon a very unequal base and by the procession of the waters, have a more local character. Everywhere, by digging to a certain depth, one finds all the anterior beds in the order of their formation; whilst the tertiary rocks

are not found everywhere, nor all the beds of the latter.

During the earthquakes which took place at the commencement of this period, one finds that organic life has been arrested, which is proved by the absence of fossils in these rocks. But, as soon as a calm was restored, vegetables and animals re-appeared. The conditions of vitality being changed, the atmosphere becoming purer, new species, with more perfect organization, were formed. As regards structure, the plants differed very little from those of our time.

During the two preceding periods the earth uncovered by water was of very small extent, marshy, and frequently submerged: that is why the animals were all either aquatic or amphibious. The tertiary period, in which vast continents have been formed, has been characterized by the appearance of terrestrial animals, just as the transition period has brought forth colossal vegetables, and the secondary period monstrous reptiles; this has produced gigantic mammiferous animals, such as the elephant, rhinoceros, hippopotamus, paleotherium, megatherium, dinotherium, the mastodon, mammoth, etc. It has produced birds as well, some of the species of which are living now.

A few of the animals of this period have survived subsequent inundations. Others that have been designated by the generic term, "antediluvian animals," have completely disappeared, or have been replaced by analogous species, in form lighter and smaller in which the original types have been merely outlined: such are the *felisspeloea*, a carnivorous animal about

the size of the bull, having the anatomical characteristics of tiger and lion; the *cervus megaceron*, a variety of the deer, of which the horns, three yards in length, were separated by three to four yards from their extremities.

It has long been believed that the monkey, and different varieties of four-footed animals which approach man most nearly in formation, did not yet exist; but recent discoveries appear to leave no doubt of the existence of these animals, at least toward the close of the period.

*Diluvial Period.*—This period has been marked by one of the greatest inundations which has ever visited the globe, which changed once more the aspect of its surface, and destroyed completely a multitude of living species, of which few remains only have been found. Everywhere are left traces which attest its generality. The waters, violently driven from their bed, have surrounded continents, drawing with them earth and rocks, denuding mountains, uprooting forests of a century's growth. The new deposits which they have formed are designated in geology "diluvial rocks."

One of the most significant traces of this great disaster are rocks called "erratic blocks." Thus are named granite rocks that are found isolated in plains reposing upon tertiary beds, and in the midst of diluvial rocks, sometimes many hundreds of miles from mountains whence they have been torn.

It is evident that they can have been transported <sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It is one of these blocks, evidently by its composition coming from the mountains of Norway, which serves as the pedestal to the statue of Peter the Great at St. Petersburg.

so great a distance only by the violence of a current.

A no less characteristic fact, and one the cause of which is not yet explained, is, that among the diluvial rocks are found the first aërolites. It is, then, at this epoch that they began to form. The cause which produced them did not previously exist.

It is toward this epoch that the poles commenced to be covered with ice, and the glaciers were formed on the mountains, which indicates a notable change in the temperature of the globe. This change must have been sudden; for, had it operated gradually, animals, such as the elephant, which live now only in warm climates, and which are found in great numbers in a fossil state in the polar territories, would have had time to withdraw, little by little, to the more temperate regions. Every thing goes to prove that they have been suddenly seized by great cold, and enveloped in ice.

This was, then, the veritable universal deluge. Opinions are divided as to the cause which produced it; but, whatever they may have been, the fact no less exists. It is generally supposed that a sudden change took place in the position of the axes of the earth, by which the poles were displaced, whence a general projection of the waters upon the surface. If this change had come about gradually, the waters would have been displaced by degrees without agitation; whilst every thing indicates a violent and sudden commotion.

While in ignorance of the veritable cause, one can give only hypotheses. The displacement of the waters can have been occasioned only by the up-

heaving of certain parts of the solid crust, and the formation of new mountains on the bosom of the waters, like that which took place at the commencement of the tertiary period; but, beyond there having been a general inundation, this would explain nothing of the sudden change of the temperature of the poles.

In the agitation caused by the displacement of the waters, many animals have perished; others, in order to escape inundation, have withdrawn to the high elevations, into caves and crevasses, where they have perished in masses, perhaps by famine, perhaps by devouring one another, or by the flowing of the water into the places where they have taken refuge, and from whence they could not escape. Thus is explained the cause for the great quantity of bones of animals, carnivorous and otherwise, which are found in great confusion in certain caves, named, by reason of this, "bone caverns." They are found most frequently under the stalagmites. In a few of them the bones seem to have been drawn there by the current of the waters.<sup>1</sup>

*Post-Diluvial or Present Period.*—The equilibrium once re-established on the surface of the globe, animal and vegetable life promptly resumed their course. The consolidated soil had taken a firmer position; the purer air agreed with more delicate organs. The sun, which shone with all its splendor through a limpid atmosphere, produced with its light

<sup>1</sup> A great number of similar caverns have been discovered, of which some are quite extensive. There exist some in Mexico which are many miles in extent. That of Aldelsberg, in Carniola, Austria, is no less than nine miles. There are many in France, England, Germany, Sicily, and other countries of Europe.

a less suffocating, more vivifying atmosphere than that of the interior furnace. The earth was inhabited by less ferocious animals; the more succulent vegetables offered a finer alimentation. All at length was prepared for the new host which must come to inhabit the earth. It was then that man appeared, the last created being, he whose intelligence henceforth must concur with the general progress by progressing himself.

Has man existed on the earth only since the diluvial period? or did he appear before this epoch? This question is a disputed one now; but its solution, whatever it may be, is only of secondary importance, as it would change none of the established facts.

The reason why it has been thought that the advent of man was posterior to the deluge is, because no authentic traces of his appearance previous to this have been found. The bones discovered in divers places, and which have been thought to belong to a supposed race of antediluvian giants, have been recognized as the bones of quadrupeds. That which is beyond doubt is, that man did not exist either in the primary, transition, or secondary periods, not only because no traces of him are found, but because conditions were not prepared for his appearance. If he has appeared in the tertiary period, it must have been towards the end, and then men must have been very few in number; because, since the most delicate remains of an immense number of animals who lived at this epoch have been found, it is not possible that men have left no indication of their presence either by some of their work or by fossil remains. Besides, the diluvial period, having been



short, has not produced notable changes in climatic and atmospheric influences. Animals and vegetables were about the same before as after. It is, then, not a material impossibility that the advent of man took place before this great inundation. The presence of the monkey at this period adds to the probability which recent discoveries appear to confirm. Whether or no man has appeared before the great universal deluge, it is certain that his career as a human being has never really commenced to outline itself until the post-diluvial period, which is specially characterized by his presence.

## CHAPTER VIII.

THEORIES OF THE EARTH.—THEORY OF PROJECTION.  
—THEORY OF CONDENSATION.—THEORY OF INCRUSTATION.

1. *Theory of Projection.*—Of all the theories touching the origin of being, that which has received the most credit in recent days is that of Buffon, perhaps by reason of the place its author held in the scientific world, perhaps because knowledge on the subject was slender at the time. By seeing all the planets moving in the same direction and in the same plane from the occident to the orient, from west to east, going over orbits of which the inclination does not exceed seven and a half degrees, Buffon concluded, by this uniformity, that they must all move in obedience to the same cause. According to him, the sun being an incandescent melted mass, he supposed that a comet, having been hurled obliquely against it, by knocking against its surface, had detached a portion, which, projected into space by the violence of the shock, became divided into many fragments. These fragments have formed planets, which have continued to move circularly, by the combination of centripetal and centrifugal force, in the way communicated by the direction of the original shock; i.e., in the plane of the ecliptic planets must then be

parts of the incandescent substance of the sun, and consequently incandescent themselves at their commencement. They have been submitted to a cooling and consolidating process during a period of time proportionate to their volume ; and, when the temperature has permitted, life has appeared on their surface. In consequence of the gradual lowering of the central heat, the earth would arise in a given time to a completely cool state ; the liquid mass would be entirely congealed ; and the air, more and more condensed, will finally disappear. The lowering of the temperature, rendering life impossible, would lead to the diminution, then to the disappearance, of all organized beings. The cooling process which has commenced at the poles would pass successively from one country to another until it reached the equator.

Such is, according to Buffon, the present state of the moon, which, smaller than the earth, should be now an extinguished world, whence life is henceforth excluded. The sun itself will some day end in the same manner. According to his calculation, it must have taken the earth about seventy-four thousand years to arrive at its present temperature, and in ninety-three thousand years it must see the end of organized nature.

2. The theory of Buffon, contradicted by more recent discoveries in science, is now almost entirely abandoned for the following reasons : 1st, For a long time it was believed that comets were solid bodies, which, coming in collision with planets, would destroy them. According to this hypothesis the supposition of Buffon was not improbable ; but it is now known that they are formed of a gaseous, condensed substance,

rarefied enough, however, to allow of stars of less magnitude being visible through their nucleus. In this state, offering less resistance than the sun, a violent shock capable of projecting afar a portion of its substance is an impossible thing. 2d, The incandescent nature of the sun is equally an hypothesis, as nothing yet discovered confirms it. The results of observation all point, however, in an opposite direction. Although its nature as yet has not been quite determined upon, the means of observation are very much improved, and thus it can be much better studied. It is now generally admitted by scientists that the sun is a globe composed of a solid substance, surrounded by a luminous atmosphere, which is not in contact with its surface.<sup>1</sup>

In the time of Buffon the six planets familiar to the ancients were the only ones discovered, — Mercury, Venus, Earth, Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn. Since then there have been discovered a number, of which the three principal — Juno, Ceres, and Pallas — have an inclined orbit of thirteen, ten, and thirty-four degrees respectively, which does not accord with the movement of unique projection.

The calculations of Buffon upon the cooling process have been recognized as completely wrong since the discovery of the law of the diminution of heat by M. Fourier. Therefore, not only seventy-four thousand years have been necessary to develop the present temperature of the earth, but rather millions of years.

<sup>1</sup> One will find a complete dissertation, according to modern science, upon the nature of the sun and comets in *Studies and Lectures upon Astronomy*, by Camille Flammarion. Price per vol., 50 cents. Can be found at Messrs. Gauthier-Villard, 55 Quai des Augustins, Paris.

Buffon has considered only the central heat of the globe, without taking into account that of the sun's rays. Now it is recognized by scientific facts, rigorously founded upon experience, that, by reason of the thickness of the terrestrial crust, the internal heat of the globe has for a long time played only an insignificant part in regulating the temperature of the surface. The variations to which the atmosphere is submitted are periodical, and due to the preponderating action of the solar heat (see chap. VII., p. 180). The effect of this cause being permanent, whilst that of the central heat is hardly any thing, the diminution of the latter can bring to the surface of the earth no sensible modification in order that the earth should become uninhabitable by the general cooling process: the extinction of the sun would be necessary.<sup>1</sup>

3. *Theory of Condensation.* — The theory of the formation of the earth by the condensation of cosmic matter is that which now prevails in science as being that which is best justified by observation, which solves the greatest number of difficulties, and which leans more than all others upon the grand principle of universal unity. It is that which has been previously described in chap. VII., "General Uranography." The two theories, as we perceive, lead to the same result, — the primitive state of incandescence of the globe ceasing, the formation of a solid crust, the existence of the central fire, and the appearance of organized life as soon as the temperature renders it possible. They differ in the mode of formation of

<sup>1</sup> For details on this subject, and for the law of the diminution of heat, see *Letters upon the Revolution of the Globe*, by Bertrand, pages 19 and 307.

the earth ; and it is probable that, if Buffon had lived in our day, he would have had other ideas.

There are, then, two different routes leading to the same end. Geology takes the earth at the point where direct observation is possible. Its state anterior to this can be only conjectural. Now, between two hypotheses, good sense teaches that it is necessary to choose the one sanctioned by logic, and which best agrees with observed facts.

4. *Theory of Incrustation.*—We mention this theory only from memory, not because it has any scientific value, but only because it has some few adherents even to-day who have been seduced by it. The following is an abstract of it: God, according to the Bible, created the world in six days, four thousand years before the Christian era. This is what geologists contest by the study of fossils, and by numerous incontestable evidences of decay, which carries the origin of the earth back a million of years. However, the Scriptures have told the truth, and the geologists also ; and it is a simple peasant—M. Michel of Figagnères (Var), author of the “Key of Life”—who makes them agree by teaching us that our earth is a very recently incrustrated planet, composed of very ancient materials. After the appearance of the unknown planet, after its having arrived at maturity in the place we now occupy, the spirit of the earth received the order to bring together its satellites, in order to form our present globe according to the laws of progress. Four of these bodies alone consented to the association proposed to them: the moon alone persisted in its autonomy ; for the globes have all their free will. In order to proceed with this fusion,

the spirit of the earth directed toward the satellites a magnetic attractive ray, which entranced all the animal, vegetable, and mineral properties which they brought to the community.

To the operation there were no witnesses save the spirit of the earth and the great celestial messengers who aided in this work by opening the globes in order to unite their contents. The joining together having been accomplished, the waters ran into the voids left by the absence of the moon. The atmospheres were mingled; the awakening or resurrection of the entranced germs commenced. Man was the last object which was awakened from the magnetic sleep, saw around him the luxuriant vegetation of a terrestrial paradise, with animals feeding in peace around him. All that could be performed in six days with workmen as powerful as those which God had charged with this commission. The planet Asia brought us the yellow race, which belongs to the most ancient civilization; Africa, the black race; Europe, the white; and America, the red. The moon would perhaps have brought the green or blue. Thus certain animals of which we find the remains may never have lived upon this present earth, but may have been found in the portions received from other worlds which have decayed. Fossils, found in climates where they would not have been able to exist lived, no doubt, in very different zones upon globes where they were born. Such remains as are found at the poles with us must have existed at the equator on their own globes.

5. This theory has against it the most positive results of experimental science, added to which it

leaves out entirely the question of origin, which it pretends to solve. It tells well how the earth should be formed, but does not instruct us how the four worlds which constitute this have been formed. If such things have taken place, why is it that we find no trace of this immense union in any depth which has been explored? If each one brought its own peculiarities of materials, then Asia, Africa, Europe, and America would each have a geology peculiar to themselves, which is not so.

On the contrary, the first granite uniform crust of a homogeneous composition is in all parts of the globe without a breach of continuity. Then the geological beds of the same formation are identical in their constitution, everywhere in the same order superposed, continuing, without interruption, from one side to the other of the seas of Europe, Asia, Africa, and America, and conversely. These beds are witnesses to the transformations of the globe, attesting that these transformations have been accomplished over all its surface, and not upon one part alone. It shows us equally well the periods of the appearance, existence, and disappearance of the same species of animals and vegetables in different parts of the world; the fauna and flora of these remote periods, marching everywhere simultaneously under the influence of a uniform temperature, changing in character everywhere according as the temperature is modified. Such a state of things is irreconcilable with the theory of the formation of the earth by the addition of many different worlds. If this idea had been conceived only a century ago, it would have been able to acquire a tem-



porary place in the purely speculative imaginary cosmogonies, founded without experiment; but now it has no vitality, will not receive examination because it is contradicted by absolute facts. Without discussing here the free will attributed to the planets, or question in regard to their spirit, one naturally inquires, What would become of the sea, which occupies the void left by the moon, if the latter had desired to join her sisters? also what would become of the earth if the moon should some day take a fancy to join the others, take her place, and expel the sea.

6. This belief has gained some adherents, because it seemed to explain the presence of the different races of men upon the earth, and their localization; but, since these races have been able to germinate upon separate worlds, why would they not be able to have germinated upon different points of the same globe? That is trying to solve a difficulty by one much greater. Indeed, however great the rapidity and dexterity with which this operation may have been performed, this adjunction could not have been made without violent commotion. The more rapid it had been, the more disastrous had been the inundations. It seems then impossible that beings in a simple magnetic sleep could have slept through it, awaking tranquilly after all was over. If these beings were only germs, of what did they consist? How could perfectly formed beings be reduced to the state of a germ? The question would always arise, How were they developed anew? The miracle of a miraculous formation would again be brought forth, but by a method less poetic and grand than the Mosaic;

whilst natural laws give an explanation of its formation much more complete, and above all more rational, deduced from experience and observation.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> When such ideas are added to a cosmogony, one wonders if the rest of it reposes upon a rational basis. The agreement which they pretend to establish by this system between the biblical Genesis and science is altogether an illusory idea, since it is contradicted by science itself. On the other hand, all beliefs issuing from the Bible have for a corner-stone the creation of a unique couple from whence all men have sprung. Take away this stone, and all which has been built upon it crumbles to pieces. Now this system giving to humanity a multiple origin is the negation of the doctrine which gives to him a common father. The author of the letter above, a man of great learning, having been for a time seduced by this theory, soon saw the vulnerable side, and delayed not to combat it with the arms of science.

## CHAPTER IX.

REVOLUTIONS OF THE GLOBE.—GENERAL OR PARTIAL REVOLUTIONS.—BIBLICAL DELUGE.—PERIODICAL REVOLUTIONS.—FUTURE INUNDATIONS.

1. *General or Partial Revolutions.*—The geological periods mark the phases of the general aspect of the globe by the succession of its transformations. But if one excepts the diluvial period, which bears the marks of sudden commotions, all have been accomplished slowly, and without sudden transition. During all the time that the constituent elements of the globe have been seeking their true position, changes have been general. Once the base consolidated, only partial modifications are produced upon the surface.

2. Besides general revolutions, the earth has undergone a great many local perturbations, which have changed the aspect of certain countries. As for the others, two causes have led to them,—fire and water. By fire,—sometimes by volcanic eruptions, which have desolated whole districts, turning villages and their inhabitants into beds of ashes; by earthquakes, or by uprisings of the solid earth-crust, making the water flow back upon the lower countries, or by depressions of this same crust in certain places over greater or less extents, where the waters have been precipitated, leaving other territo-

ries bare. Thus islands have appeared on the bosom of the ocean, while others have disappeared; thus portions of continents have separated, and formed islands; thus arms of land in the ocean, becoming dry, have united islands to continents. By water, —sometimes by overflows, or the retreat of the sea from certain shores; by uprisings, which have arrested the course of the water, lakes have been formed; by overflows and inundations, or the alluvia formed at the mouth of rivers. This alluvial deposit, by obliging the sea to flow back, has created new countries: such is the origin of the Delta of the Nile, or Lower Egypt; of the Delta of the Rhone, or Camargue.

3. *The Biblical Deluge.*—By the inspection of territories disturbed by the uprising of mountains, and beds which form long chains, one can determine their geological age. By the geological age of mountains, it is not necessary that we understand it as the number of the years of their existence, but the period during which they have been formed, and consequently their relative antiquity.

It would be an error to suppose that this antiquity is by reason of their elevation, or of their exclusively granite nature, considering that the mass of granite, while being thrown up, can have perforated and separated the superposed beds. It has thus been ascertained by observation that the mountains of Vosges, of Bretagne, and of the Côte d'Or, in France, which are not very lofty, belong to the ancient formations. They date from the transition period, and are anterior to the coal deposits. The Jura has been formed near the middle of the second-

ary period. It is contemporary with gigantic reptiles. The Pyrenees have been formed later, — at the commencement of the tertiary period. Mont Blanc, and the group of Western Alps, are posterior to the Pyrenees, and date from the middle of the tertiary period. The Eastern Alps, which comprise the mountains of the Tyrol, are more recent still; for they were not formed until the end of the tertiary period.

Some mountains of Asia are posterior to or contemporary with the diluvial period. These uprisings must have been due to great local perturbations and inundations, — greater or less according to the extent of the displacement of waters, and the interruptions and changes of course of rivers.<sup>1</sup>

4. The biblical deluge — designated also the great Asiatic deluge — is a fact which cannot be contested. It must have been occasioned by the uprising of a

<sup>1</sup> The last century offers a remarkable example of a phenomenon of this kind. Six days' journey from the city of Mexico was found in 1759 a fertile and well-cultivated country, where grew an abundance of rice, maize, and bananas. In the month of June frightful earthquakes agitated the soil, and the tremblings continued two whole months. In the night of Sept. 28 and 29 the earth experienced a violent commotion: a territory of many miles in extent was slowly raised, and attained a height of five hundred feet upon a surface of thirty square miles. The earth undulated like ocean-waves in a tempest. Millions of hillocks alternately rose and fell. At length a gulf, nearly nine miles in extent, opened. From it proceeded smoke, fire, burning stones, and cinders, which were thrown to a prodigious height. Six mountains rose from this yawning gulf, among which the volcano Jorullo was raised to about five hundred and fifty yards, or thirteen hundred and seventy-five feet, above the former plain. At the moment the earthquake commenced, two rivers, — the Cuitimba and the Rio San Pedro, — flowing behind, inundated the whole plain occupied now by the Jorullo; but a gulf opened, and swallowed them. They re-appeared in the west, very far away from their ancient bed. (Louis Figuier: *The Earth before the Deluge*, p. 370.)

portion of the mountains of that country, similar to the phenomenon in Mexico. That which supports this theory is the existence of an inland sea, which formerly extended from the Black Sea to the Arctic Ocean, which has been attested by geological observations. The Caspian Sea, whose waters are brackish, although not in communication with any other sea, the Sea of Aral, and the innumerable lakes scattered over the immense plains of Tartary and the steppes of Russia, appear to be remains of this ancient sea. Then, by the upheaval of the Caucasian Mountains, a part of these waters have flowed back northward to the Arctic Ocean, and another portion to the south toward the Indian Ocean. These inundated and ravished Mesopotamia in particular, and all the country inhabited by the ancestors of the Hebrews. Although this deluge extended over a considerable surface, it is well understood to-day that it has been only local in its extent; that it has not been due to rain: for, however abundant and continuous rain had been for sixty days, the calculation proves that the quantity of fallen water could not possibly have been sufficient to cover all the earth even to the tops of the highest mountains. But men were then acquainted with only a very small portion of the globe, and had no idea of its configuration. As soon as the inundation had encompassed all known countries, it was for them a universal flood. If, to this belief, one adds the hyperbolical form and imagery peculiarly Oriental in style, one cannot be surprised at the exaggeration in the biblical recital.

The Asiatic deluge was evidently posterior to the

advent of man upon the earth, since the memory of it has been preserved by tradition only in the memory of the inhabitants of this part of the world, who have consecrated it in their theogonies. It is equally posterior to the great universal deluge which has marked the present geological period; and, when they speak of antediluvian men and animals, geologists make reference to this first cataclysm.

6. *Periodical Revolutions.* — Besides its annual motion around the sun, which produces the seasons; its rotary movement upon itself in twenty-four hours, which produces day and night, — the earth has a third movement, which is completed in about twenty-five thousand years (or, more exactly, 25,868 years), which produces the phenomenon designated in astronomy “the precession of the equinoxes.” This movement, which it would be impossible to explain in a few words without figures, and without a geometrical demonstration, is described by a waved curve very nearly circular, which has been compared to the movement of a dying spinning-top, in consequence of which the axis of the earth, changing in inclination, describes a double cone, of which the summit is at the centre of the earth, and the bases embrace the surface circumscribed by the polar circles; that is to say, an amplitude of twenty-three and a half degrees of radius.<sup>1</sup>

7. Sometimes the equinoctial points are called the equinoxes. More commonly by the equinoxes are

<sup>1</sup> An hour-glass composed of two conical glasses, turning upon itself in an inclined position, — or, still better, two sticks crossed in the form of an X turning upon their point of intersection, — can give one an approximate idea of the figure formed by this movement of the axis.

meant the times when the sun enters the equinoctial points, — viz., March 21 and Sept. 22; the former being called the vernal or spring equinox, and the latter the autumnal: therefore the sun is exactly on the equator twice a year. But, in consequence of the gradual change in the obliquity of the axis, the obliquity of the ecliptic is brought about. The time of the equinox is found each year to have advanced a few minutes (twenty-five minutes seven seconds). It is this advance which is called the precession of the equinoxes from the Latin *præcedere*, “to march before,” derived from *præ*, signifying “before,” and *cedere*, signifying “to go away.”

These few minutes, after a long time, make years. The result is that the equinox of the springtime, which now arrives in March, will arrive in a given time in February, then in January, then in December; and then the month of December will have the temperature of March, and March that of June, and so on in succession, until, returning to the month of March, it will be found as at present, which will be 25,868 years from now. Then will it recommence the same revolution indefinitely.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The precession of the equinoxes leads to another change, that which has been brought to pass in the signs of the Zodiac. The earth going around the sun in a year, according as it advances, the sun finds itself every month opposite a new constellation: these are twelve in number; viz., Taurus, Aries, Pisces, Aquarius, Capricornus, Sagittarius, Scorpio, Libra, Virgo, Leo, Cancer, Gemini. These are the signs of the Zodiac: they form a circle in the plane of the terrestrial equator. According to the month of the birth of an individual, they say that he was born under such a sign: whence the prognostications of astrology. But, in consequence of the precession of the equinoxes, it happens that the months do not correspond to constellations as they did two thousand years ago. For instance, a person born in July is not now born in the sign Leo, but in that



8. It results from this conical movement of the axis that the poles of the earth do not constantly regard the same points in the heavens; that the polar star is not always the same; that the poles are gradually more or less inclined toward the sun, and receive from it more or less direct rays. Whence it follows that Iceland and Lapland, for example, which are under the polar circle, will, in a given time, be able to receive the solar rays as though they were in the latitude of Spain or Italy; and that, in the extreme opposite position, Spain and Italy will have the temperature of Iceland and Lapland: so in succession at every renewed period of 25,868 years.

9. The consequences of this movement have not yet been determined upon with precision, because only a very small part of its revolution has been observed. We have only then to offer a few presumptions, some of which are, however, highly probable. The consequences of this are, — 1st, The heat and the cold alternating at the poles, and consequently the fusion of polar ice during 12,934 years, and their reformation during another similar period: whence it must result that the poles are not destined to abide in everlasting sterility, but will enjoy in their turn the blessing of fertility. 2d, The gradual displacement of the sea, which encroaches little by little upon the land, whilst it leaves bare other lands in order to abandon them again, and lie upon its former bed. This periodical movement indefinitely renewed would cover the whole earth with water once every 25,868 years. The slowness with which

of Cancer: thus falls the superstition attaching to signs (chap. V., p. 121).

the sea thus operates renders it almost imperceptible to each generation; but after a few centuries it is very marked. It can cause no sudden inundation, because men retire from it from age to age by measure as the sea advances, and they advance upon that land from which the sea retreats. It is to this cause that some wise men attribute the retreat of the sea upon certain shores, and its invasion upon others.

10. The slow, gradual, and periodical displacement of the sea is a fact proved by experience, attested by numerous examples at all points of the globe. In this manner it keeps in repair the productive forces of the earth. This long immersion is a time of repose, during which the submerged earth recuperates the vital principles exhausted by a no shorter period of production. The immense deposits of organic matter brought by the waters from age to age are natural composts periodically renewed; and generations succeed generations without perceiving these changes.<sup>1</sup>

Ancient documents state that upon this ground, where one can sail upon the water to-day, was the village of St. Denis-chef-de-Caux. The sea having invaded the land during the fourteenth century, the church was engulfed in 1378. It is pretended that in a

<sup>1</sup> Among the most recent facts proving the displacement of the sea, one can cite the following: In the Gulf of Gascogne, between the old Souillac and the tower of Cordova, when the sea is calm, one discovers in the water's depth pieces of wall. These are the remains of the great and ancient city of Noviomagus, invaded by the water A.D. 580. The rock of Cordova, which then joined the shore, is now twelve kilometres from it. By La Manche, upon the Havre side, the sea gains every day upon the earth, and undermines the cliffs of St. Ardres, which are gradually crumbling. Two kilometres from the shore, between St. Ardres and Cape Hague, exists the bank of L'Éclat, in olden times dry ground and united to *terra firma*.



calm tide the remains of it can be seen in the waters. Upon nearly the whole extent of the coast of Holland the sea has been restrained only by dikes, which give way from time to time. The ancient Lake Fleno, united with the sea in 1255, forms to-day the Gulf of Zuyder-Zee. This eruption of the ocean submerged many villages. Judging from this, Paris, and, indeed, all of France, will some day be again occupied by the sea, as it has already been many times, as geological observations prove. The mountainous regions will then form islands like Jersey, Guernsey, and England, formerly contiguous to the continent. The countries now traversed by railroads will then be sailed over. Ships will stop at Montmartre, at Mount Valerian, on the shores of St. Cloud and Mendon. The woods and forests through which we now promenade will be buried under water, covered again with earth, and inhabited by fish instead of birds. The biblical deluge cannot have been caused in this way, since the invasion of the waters was sudden and their sojourn short: otherwise, it would have lasted many thousand years, would still exist without men knowing of its occurrence.

11. *Future Deluges.*—The great commotions of the earth have taken place when the crust, by reason of its thinness, offered only a feeble resistance to the effervescence of the incandescent substances in the interior. They diminished in intensity and generality as the crust consolidated. Numerous volcanoes are now extinguished; others have been recovered with rocks of a posterior formation. There will still be local perturbations, in consequence of volcanic

eruptions; also new volcanoes will open with the sudden inundations of certain countries. Some islands will spring out of the sea, and others will be engulfed by it; but the time of the general inundations, like those which have marked great geological periods, is past. The earth, henceforth, will take a position which, without being absolutely unchangeable, places human beings in shelter from general perturbation, unless by unknown causes, unknown to our globe, something should happen which cannot be foreseen.

12. As to comets, it has been decided that their influence is salutary, rather than hurtful; that they appear destined to refurnish with provisions (if such an expression be allowable) worlds by carrying to them the vital principles which they have accreted during their journey through space in the neighborhood of suns. They would thus be sources of prosperity, rather than messengers of evil. On account of their gaseous nature, which is now well understood (chap. VI., p. 146), a violent shock is not to be feared from them; for, in case they should collide with the earth, the latter would pass through the comet as through a fog. Their tails are not formidable, as they are formed only by the reflection of the solar light in the immense atmosphere surrounding them, and are constantly directed from the side opposed to the sun, and change their direction according to the sun's position.

This gaseous matter would thus be able, in consequence of the rapidity of the comet's movement, to form a sort of coma like the foamy track which follows a ship, or the smoke of a locomotive. Besides, many comets have already approached the earth

without causing any damage ; and, by reason of their respective density, the earth will exercise a greater attraction upon the comet than the comet upon the earth. The remains of an old prejudice can alone inspire fear of their presence.<sup>1</sup>

13. It is necessary to banish from chimerical hypotheses the possibility of the encounter of the earth with another planet. The regularity and unchangeableness of the laws which preside over the movements of celestial bodies take away all probability of a collision between them. The earth, however, will have an end ; but how ? This is something upon which it is impossible to decide ; but, as it is far from the perfection to which it will attain, and from the decay which will be a sign of its decline, its present inhabitants may well be assured that it will not be in their time (chap. VI., p. 161).

14. Physically the earth has had convulsions from its infancy. It has, however, now entered upon a career of relative stability, of peaceable progress, which is accomplished by the regular return of the same physical phenomena, and the intelligent concurrence of man. But it is yet quite in the infancy of its work of moral progress : there will be the cause of its greatest commotions. Until humanity be sufficiently advanced toward perfection by intelligence and the practice of the divine laws, greater perturbations will take place in man than in nature ; that is to say, there will occur social and moral, rather than physical, changes.

<sup>1</sup> The comet of 1861 has traversed the same route as the earth twenty hours before the latter, without any accident resulting therefrom.

## CHAPTER X.

ORGANIC GENESIS. — FIRST FORMATION OF LIVING BEINGS. — VITAL PRINCIPLE. — SPONTANEOUS GENERATION. — SCALE OF MATERIAL BEINGS. — MAN.

1. *First Formation of Living Beings.* — There was a time when animals did not exist, and also a time when they began to appear. Each species appeared as soon as the earth acquired the conditions necessary to its existence: this we positively know. But how were the first individuals of each species formed? A first couple must have been formed. Many beings have sprung from them; but this first couple, whence did it spring? This is one of the mysteries of the beginning, about which one can form only hypotheses. If science cannot yet completely solve the problem, it can at least put us on the way to a solution.

2. The first question presenting itself is this: Has each animal species sprung from a single first couple, or have many couples been created simultaneously in different places? This last supposition is the most probable. One can even call it a result of observation. Indeed, there exists in the same species many varieties, which are distinguished by more or less decided characteristics. One type at least was needed for each variety, appropriate to the place where it was called into being, since each one produces identically similar beings.

Moreover, the life of an individual, above all that of a growing child, is submitted to so many uncertainties, that an entire species would be endangered without a plurality of primitive types, which would not be in accordance with divine foresight. Besides, if one type has been able to form itself upon a certain point, there is no reason why it should not be formed in many places by the same cause. Finally, we discover, by observation of geological beds in the rocks of the same formation, enormous proportions of the same species upon the most distant points of the globe. This multiplication so general, and in some sort contemporaneous, would be impossible with an isolated primitive type. All concurs then in proving that there has been a simultaneous and multiple creation of the first couples of each animal and vegetable species.

3. The knowledge of the formation of the first living beings can be deduced by analogy from the same law, by means of which have been formed and are forming every day inorganic bodies. According as one studies the laws of nature, one sees the machinery which at first sight appears so complicated, become simplified, and blend into the great law of unity, which presides over the entire work of creation. One will comprehend it better if one will notice the formation of inorganic bodies, which is the first stage of it.

4. In chemistry are found a certain number of elementary substances, such as, oxygen, hydrogen, nitrogen, carbon, chloride, iodine, fluor, sulphur, phosphorus, and all the metals. By their combination they form compound bodies, — the oxides, acids,

alalkalies, salts, and the innumerable varieties resulting from combinations of these. By the combination of two bodies, in order to form a third, a particular concurrence of circumstances is exacted, — either a determined degree of heat, dryness or humidity, movement or repose, or an electric current, etc. If these conditions do not exist, the combination does not take place.

5. When there is a combination, the bodies composing it lose their characteristic properties, whilst the composition resulting from it possesses new ones, different from those of the first. It is thus, for example, that oxygen and hydrogen, which are invisible gases, being chemically combined, form water, which is a liquid, solid, or vaporous according to temperature. Water, properly speaking, is no more oxygen and hydrogen, but a new body. This water decomposed, the two gases, becoming again free, recover their properties, and are no more water. The same quantity of water can thus be decomposed and recomposed *ad infinitum*. In a simple mixture there is no production of a new body; and the mixed principles conserve their intrinsic properties, which are simply weakened as wine mingled with water. It is thus that a mixture of twenty-one parts of oxygen and seventy-nine parts of nitrogen forms respirable air, whilst a chemical combination of five of oxygen over two of nitrogen produces nitric acid.

6. The composition and decomposition of bodies take place according to the degree of affinity that the elementary principles possess for one another. The formation of water, for example, results from



the reciprocal affinity of oxygen and hydrogen; but, if one places in contact with the water a body having a greater affinity for oxygen than for hydrogen, the water is decomposed, the oxygen is absorbed, the hydrogen liberated, and there is no more water.

7. Compound bodies are always formed in definite proportions; that is to say, by the combination of a quantity determined by the constituent principles. Thus, in order to form water, one part of oxygen is needed and two of hydrogen. If you mix two volumes of hydrogen with more than one of oxygen, then cause them to unite, the hydrogen would only unite with one volume of oxygen; but, if in other conditions there are two parts of oxygen combined with two of hydrogen, in place of water, the deutoxide of hydrogen is obtained,—a corrosive liquid, formed, however, of the same elements as water, but in another proportion.

8. Such is, in few words, the law which presides at the formation of all natural bodies. The innumerable variety of these bodies is the result of a very small number of elementary principles combined in different proportions. Thus oxygen, combined in certain proportions with sulphur, carbon, and phosphorus, forms carbonic, sulphuric, and phosphoric acids. Oxygen and iron form the oxide of iron, or rust; oxygen and lead, both inoffensive, give place to the oxides of lead, such as litharge, white lead, and red lead, which are poisonous. Oxygen, with metals called calcium, sodium, potassium, forms limestone, soda, and potash. Limestone, united with carbonic acid, forms the carbonates of limestone, or calcareous stones, such as

marble, chalk, building stones, the stalactites of grottos. United with sulphuric acid, it forms the sulphate of limestone, or plaster and alabaster; with phosphoric acid, the phosphate of limestone. The solid base of bones, hydrogen, and chloride form hydrochloric acid. Hydrochloric acid and soda form the hydrochlorate of soda, or marine salt.

9. All these combinations, and thousands of others, are artificially obtained on a small scale in chemical laboratories. They are operated on a large scale in the grand laboratory of nature. The earth, in its beginning, did not contain these combinations of matter, but only their constituent elements in a state of volatility. When the calcareous and other earths became after a long time stony, they had been deposited on its surface. They did not at first exist as formations, but in the air were found in a gaseous state. These substances, precipitated by the effect of cold under the sway of favoring circumstances, have been combined according to the degree of their molecular affinity. It is then that the different varieties of carbonates and sulphates, etc., have been formed, — at first in a state of dissolution in the water, then deposited on the surface of the soil. Let us suppose that by some cause the earth should return to its primitive incandescent state. All that we see would decompose; the elements would separate; all fusible substances would melt; all those which were volatile would return to a state of volatility; after which a second cooling process would lead to a new precipitation, and the ancient combinations would form anew.

10. These considerations prove how necessary is

chemistry to give us an intelligent idea of Genesis. Before the knowledge of the laws of molecular affinity, it was impossible to comprehend the formation of the earth. This science has thrown an entirely new light upon the question, as astronomy and geology have done upon other points of view.

11. In the formation of solid bodies, one of the most remarkable phenomena is that of crystallization, which consists of the regular form which certain substances appropriate in their passage from the liquid or gaseous state to a solid condition. This form, which varies according to the nature of the substance, is generally that of geometrical solids, such as the prism, the rhomboid, cube, and pyramid. Every one has seen the crystals of sugar candy,—rock crystals, or crystallized silica, which are prisms with six sides terminated by a pyramid equally hexagonal. The diamond is pure carbon, or crystallized coal. The designs which are produced upon window-panes in winter are due to the crystallization of the vapor from water under the form of prismatic needles.

The regular disposition of the crystals belongs to the particular form of the molecules of each body. These infinitely small particles occupy, nevertheless, a certain space, have been drawn toward one another by molecular attraction: they are arranged and in juxtaposition to one another, according to the exigence of form, in such a way that each one takes its place around the nucleus, or first centre of attraction, and forms a symmetrical whole. Crystallization only operates under the empire of certain favorable circumstances, without which it cannot take place. A right degree of temperature with repose are essential con-

ditions. Too much heat, keeping the molecules separated, would prevent condensation: and, as agitation is opposed to their symmetrical arrangement, they would form only a confused and irregular mass under its influence, which is consequently not crystallization in the true sense of the word.

12. The law which presides at the formation of minerals leads naturally to the formation of organic bodies. Chemical analysis shows us all vegetable and animal substances composed of the same elements as inorganic bodies. Of these elements those which play the principal rôle are oxygen, hydrogen, nitrogen, and carbon; the others are only accessory to them. As in the mineral kingdom, the difference of proportion in the combination of these elements produces all varieties of organic substances and their various properties: such as, muscles, bone, blood, bile, nerves, cerebral matter, and fat among animals; and sap, wood, leaves, fruits, essences, oils, and resins in the vegetable kingdom. Thus no special body enters into the composition of animals and plants which is not also found in the mineral kingdom.<sup>1</sup>

13. A few common examples will show the trans-

<sup>1</sup> The following table of analysis of a few substances shows the difference of properties resulting solely in the difference in the proportions of the constituent elements in 100 parts:—

	Carbon.	Hydrogen.	Oxygen.	Nitrogen.
Sugar-cane . . . . .	42.470	6.900	50.530	—
Grape-sugar . . . . .	36.710	6.780	56.510	—
Alcohol . . . . .	51.980	13.700	34.320	—
Olive-oil . . . . .	77.210	18.360	9.430	—
Oil of nuts . . . . .	79.774	10.570	9.122	0.534
Fat . . . . .	78.996	11.700	9.304	—
Fibrine . . . . .	53.360	7.021	19.685	19.934

formations which take place in the kingdom of organic beings by the modification of the constituent elements alone. In the juice of the grape is found neither wine nor alcohol, but simply water and sugar. When this juice has arrived at maturity, and is placed in favorable circumstances, fermentation is produced. In this process a portion of the sugar is decomposed. Oxygen, hydrogen, and carbon are separated, and combined in the required proportions to form alcohol. By drinking the grape-juice when it is first formed, one does not drink alcohol, as it does not yet exist therein. In bread and vegetables that we eat, there is certainly neither flesh, blood, bone, bile, nor cerebral matter; yet these articles of food produce them by decomposing and recomposing in the labor of digestion, and produce these different substances solely by the transmutation of their constitutive elements. In the seed of a tree there is neither wood, leaves, flowers, nor fruit; and it is a puerile error to believe that the entire tree, in a microscopic form, is found in the seed. There is not even in this seed the quantity of oxygen, hydrogen, and carbon necessary to form a leaf of the tree. The seed encloses a germ which comes to light when the necessary conditions are found. This germ grows by aid of the juices it draws from the earth, and the gas that it inhales from the air. These juices, which are neither wood, leaves, flowers, nor fruit, by infiltrating themselves into the plant, form sap, as food with animals makes blood. This sap, carried by the circulation into all parts of the vegetable, according as it is submitted to a special elaboration, is transformed into wood, leaves, and fruits, as blood is transformed into flesh, bones,

bile, etc.; and, although these are always the same elements, — oxygen, hydrogen, nitrogen, and carbon, — they are diversely combined.

14. The different combinations of the elements for the formation of mineral, vegetable, and animal substances, can then be formed only under propitious circumstances. Outside of these circumstances the elementary principles are in a sort of inertia; but, as soon as conditions are favorable, a work of elaboration commences. The molecules begin to move: they act, approach, and are drawn toward one another, and separate by virtue of the law of affinity, and by their multiple combinations compose the infinite variety of substances.

If these conditions cease, the work is suddenly arrested, to recommence so soon as conditions are again furnished. Thus vegetation is active, retards, ceases, and resumes action under the power of heat, light, humidity, cold, and dryness; as some plants prosper in one climate or soil, and perish in another.

15. That which took place from the beginning is daily taking place under our eyes; for the laws of nature are always the same since the constituent elements of organic and inorganic beings are identical. As we continually see them under the empire of certain circumstances form stones, flowers, and fruits, mineral, vegetable, one can conclude that the bodies of the first living beings were formed as the first stones, — by the re-union of elementary molecules by virtue of the law of affinity, according as the conditions of vitality of the globe have been propitious to this or that species. The similitude of form and color in the reproduction of individuals of each

species can be compared to the similitude of form of each species of crystal. The molecules, being in juxtaposition under the dominion of the same law, produce an analogous whole.

16. *The Vital Principle.*—Though we say that plants and animals are formed of the same constituents as minerals, it is necessary to understand this statement in a purely material sense, as it has reference only to the body. Without speaking of the intelligent principle, which is a question by itself, there is in organic matter a special indiscernible principle, which has never yet been defined: it is the vital principle. This principle, which is active in living beings, though extinct in beings deprived of life by death, nevertheless gives to them characteristic properties distinguishing them from inorganic substances. Chemistry, which decomposes and recomposes the greater part of inorganic bodies, has power to decompose organic bodies, but has never been known to reconstruct even a dead leaf, which is a conclusive proof that there is something in one which does not exist in the other.

17. Is the vital principle something distinct, having a separate existence before it enters the systematic unity of the generative element? or is it only a particular state, one of the modifications of the universal cosmic fluid, which has become the principle of life, as light, fire, heat, electricity? It is in this last sense that the question is solved by the communications connected with this subject (chap. VI., “General Uranography”); but, whatever the opinion be concerning the nature of the vital principle, we know it exists as we see the effects of it.

One can then admit logically, that, in forming themselves from it, organic beings have assimilated the vital principle necessary to their existence as immortal beings; or, if one wishes to say that this principle has been developed in each individual through a combination of elements under the rule of certain circumstances, one sees heat, light, and electricity develop themselves.

18. Oxygen, hydrogen, nitrogen, and carbon, in combining themselves without the vital principle, form only a mineral, or inorganic body. The vital principle, modifying the molecular constitution of this body, gives to it special properties. In place of a mineral molecule is found a molecule of organic matter. The activity of the vital principle is sustained during life by the action of the organs, as heat by the rotary movement of a wheel. As this action ceases with death, the vital principle is extinguished, as heat when the wheel ceases to turn. But the effect produced upon the molecular state of the body by the vital principle lives after its extinction, as the carbonization of wood continues after the extinction of heat, and the cessation of the movement of the wheel. In the analysis of organic bodies, chemistry finds again the constituent elements, oxygen, etc.; but it cannot reconstruct them, because the cause exists no more: and thus the effect cannot be reproduced, although it can reconstruct a stone.

19. We have taken as an illustration heat generated by the movement of a wheel, because it is a common effect known to all, and more easy to comprehend; but it had been more exact to say, that, in the combination of elements needed to form organic



bodies, they are developed by electricity. Organic bodies are therefore veritable electric piles which operate to the extent that the elements composing them are in a condition to generate electricity, which is life. When these conditions are arrested, death ensues. The vital principle can be none other than a particular kind of electricity designated under the name of animal electricity, evolved during life by the action of the organs, of which the production is arrested by death owing to the cessation of this action.

20. *Spontaneous Generation.* — One naturally asks, Why have there not been formed more living beings in the same conditions as the first to appear on the earth? The question of spontaneous generation with which science is occupied to-day, although yet diversely decided upon, cannot fail to throw light upon this subject.

The problem proposed is this: Are there spontaneously formed in our day organic beings by the sole union of the constituent elements without previous germs produced by ordinary generation? i.e., without fathers or mothers. The partisans of spontaneous generation reply affirmatively, and are supported by direct observations, which seem conclusive. Others think that all living beings are reproduced by one another, and support this fact arrived at by experience, as the germs of certain vegetable and animal species, being dispersed, can preserve a latent vitality for a considerable time until circumstances are favorable to their birth. This opinion does not answer any question concerning the formation of the first parents of any species.

21. Without discussing the two systems, it is well to remark that the principle of spontaneous generation can evidently be applied only to the inferior orders of beings of the vegetable and animal kingdoms, to those on which life is commencing to dawn, their organisms being extremely simple and rudimentary. These are probably the first which have appeared upon the earth, of which the generation has been spontaneous. We could thus form an idea of a permanent analogous creation to this which has taken place in the first ages of the world.

22. Why, then, could not beings of a complex organization be formed in the same manner? That these beings have not always existed is a positive fact: then they must have had a beginning. If moss, lichens, zoöphytes, infusoria, intestinal worms, and others can be spontaneously produced, why is it not the same with trees, fishes, dogs, and horses? For a time investigations rest here. The conducting thread is lost, and, until that be found, the field is open to hypotheses. It would then be imprudent and premature to give any views on the subject as absolute truths.

23. If the fact of spontaneous generation is proved, however limited it may be, it is no less a capital fact, a steady beacon-light on the way to new discoveries. If complex organic beings are produced in this manner, who knows how they have obtained their origin? Who knows the secret of all transformations? When one regards the oak and the acorn, who can say if a mysterious tie does not exist between the polyp and the elephant? Let us leave to time the care of bringing light to the depth of this abyss: perhaps some day

it may be sounded. This knowledge in a scientific point of view is, without doubt, interesting; but it is not that which influences the destinies of men.

24. *Scale of Corporal Beings.* — Between the vegetable and animal kingdom there are no distinctly traced boundaries. Upon the borders of the two are the zoöphytes, or animal plants, of which the name indicates that they belong to both: they are the hyphen between the two. Like animals, plants are born, live, grow, are nourished, breathe, reproduce their kind, and die. Like them they have need of light, heat, and water: if they are deprived of them, they wither and die. The absorption of vitiated air and deleterious substances poisons them. Their distinctive trait of character, the most defined, is of being attached to the soil, and, without leaving their place, drawing their nourishment from it. The zoöphyte has the exterior appearance of a plant. Like the plant it belongs to the soil, but seems to partake more of the nature of an animal. It draws its nourishment from the ambient midst. An animal, being one degree above a zoöphyte, is free to go, and seek its food. Firstly, there are innumerable varieties of polyps with gelatinous bodies, without very distinct organs, and which differ from plants only by locomotion. Then come in the order of development those with organs of vital activity and instinct, — intestinal worms, mollusks, fleshy animals without bones, of which some are entirely destitute, as slugs or cuttle-fish; others are provided with shells, as snails and oysters; then shell-fish, of which the skin is invested with a hard shell, like crabs and lobsters; insects, who lead a very active life, and manifest an

industrious instinct, like the ant, the bee, and the spider; a few submit themselves to a metamorphosis, as the caterpillar, which is transformed into an elegant butterfly. Then comes the order of vertebrates, — animals with a bony framework, — which comprises fish, reptiles, birds, and mammals, of which the organization is more complete.

25. *Man.* — At the corporal and purely anatomical point of view, man belongs to the mammals, from which he differs only slightly in outward form. Beyond that he is of the same chemical composition as all animals, has the same organs, functions, modes of nutrition, respiration, secretion, and reproduction. He is born, lives, and dies in the same conditions; and at his death his body is decomposed like that of all other beings. There is not in his blood, flesh, or bone, an element more or less than in those of the lower animals. Like the latter, in dying he renders to the earth oxygen, hydrogen, nitrogen, and carbon, which were combined in order to form him, and go towards forming new combinations, new mineral, vegetable, and animal bodies. The analogy is so perfect that man can study his own organic functions in certain animals when experiments cannot be made with himself.

26. In the family of mammals man belongs to the two-legged order of animals. Immediately below him comes animals with four legs, — the monkeys, of which a few, like the orang-outang, chimpanzee, and the ape, have certain ways like men, so much so that for a long time they have been called wild men of the woods. Like him they walk erect, use a stick, and carry food to their mouths with their hands, which are characteristically human habits.

27. Although one can observe the scale of living beings at the point of view of organism, it is recognized that from the lichen to the tree, and from the zoöphyte to man, there is a continuous chain elevating itself by degrees, in which all the links are joined together. Following step by step the series of beings, one can say that each species is a transformation of the species immediately below it. Since the body of man is in conditions identical with other bodies chemically and constitutionally, as he is born, lives, and dies in the same manner, he must have been formed in the same way.

28. Although it is humbling to his pride, man must be resigned to behold in his material body only the last link of animality upon the earth. The inexorable argument of facts compels him thus to regard himself, against which all protestation is vain. But, the more the body diminishes in value in his eyes, the more the spiritual principle increases in importance. If the first puts him on a level with the brute, the second elevates him to an immeasurable height. We can see the point where the animal stops: we cannot see the limit to which the human spirit can attain.

29. Materialism can see by this that Spiritism, far from fearing the discoveries of science and its positivism, goes before and invites them, because it is certain that the spiritual principle, which has an existence of its own, can suffer no harm from them.

## CHAPTER XI.

SPIRITUAL GENESIS. — SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE. — UNION OF SPIRITUAL PRINCIPLE WITH MATTER. — HYPOTHESIS UPON THE ORIGIN OF HUMAN BODIES. — INCARNATION OF SPIRITS. — RE-INCARNATION. — EMIGRATION AND IMMIGRATION OF SPIRITS. — THE ADAMIC RACE. — DOCTRINE OF FALLEN ANGELS.

1. *Spiritual Principle.* — The existence of the spiritual principle is a fact needing no more demonstration than does the existence of the material principle. It is a sort of axiomatic truth ; it affirms itself by its effects as matter by those which are peculiar to it. According to the maxim, all effects have a cause : all intellectual effects must have an intelligent cause. There is no one who would not see a difference between the mechanical effect of a bell agitated by the wind, and the movement of this same bell destined to give a signal, a notice, attesting by that a thought, an intention. Now, as it can occur to no one to attribute the thought to a bell, one concludes that it is moved by an intelligence to which it serves as an instrument of manifestation. For the same reason no one thinks of attributing thought to the body of a deceased man.

2. The spiritual principle is the corollary of the existence of God. Without this principle God would forever remain unrevealed to man ; for one could not

conceive sovereign intelligence reigning eternally over only animal matter, or a terrestrial monarch reigning throughout his life only over stones. As one cannot admit God to be without the essential elements of divinity, justice, and goodness, these qualities would be useless if exercised only over matter.

3. On the other hand, one would not be able to conceive of a God sovereignly just and good creating intelligent and sensible beings, in order to condemn them to nothingness after a few years of suffering without compensation, enjoying a view of an indefinite succession of beings who are born without having demanded the gift of life, who are endowed with the power of thought only to learn pain, and are destroyed after an ephemeral existence. Without the survival of the thinking being, the sufferings of life would be on the part of God cruelty without object. This is why materialism and atheism are consequences of one another. Denying the cause, one cannot admit the effect; denying the effect, one cannot admit the cause. Consequently materialism is not reasonable.

4. The idea of the perpetuity of the spiritual principle is innate in man.

*Intuition and Aspiration.* — He comprehends that there alone is compensation for the ills of life. That is why there always have been and always will be more spiritists than materialists, more theists than atheists. To the intuitive idea and to the power of reason Spiritism comes to add the sanction of facts, — the material proof of the existence of a spiritual being, of its survival, immortality, and individu-

ality. It points directly to and defines that which was vague and abstruse in this thought. It shows us the intelligent being acting outside of matter either during or after the life of the body.

5. The spiritual and vital principle are by no means one and the same thing! Commencing always with the observation of facts, if the vital principle were inseparable from the intelligent principle, there would be some sense in confounding them. But, as we see some beings who live without thinking, like plants, — beings animated with organic life, who give no manifestation of thought; as there are produced in living beings active movements independent of the act of the will; as during sleep organic life is in all its activity, whilst intellectual life does not manifest itself by any exterior sign, — we are induced to conclude that organic life resides in a principle inherent in matter, independent of the spiritual life which is inherent in spirit. Consequently, as matter possesses vitality independent of spirit, and spirit has a vitality independent of matter, it is evident that this double vitality reposes upon two different principles.

6. Does the spiritual principle have its source in the universal cosmic element? Can it be only a transformation of it? a mode of existence of this element, like light, heat, electricity, etc.? If it were thus, the spiritual principle would submit to the vicissitudes of matter. It would be extinguished by disintegration, as is the vital principle. An intelligent being would have a momentary existence, like unto the body; and at death it would be annihilated, or return into the universal whole, which is the doc-



trine of the materialists. The properties *sui generis* which are found in the spiritual principle prove that it has an independent existence of its own; but, if it had its origin in matter, it would not have these properties. Consequently, as intelligence and thought cannot be attributes of matter, one arrives at the conclusion that the material and spiritual elements are the two constituent principles of the universe. The individualized spiritual element constitutes the beings called spirits, as the individualized material element constitutes the different organic and inorganic bodies of nature.

7. Admitting there is a spiritual being, and its source found to be outside of matter, what is its origin? from whence does it come? Here the means of investigation absolutely fail, as in all matters relating to the beginning of things. Man can ascertain only that which exists. Upon all else he can establish only hypothesis. Whether this knowledge is beyond the compass of his present intelligence, or whether it is useless or inconvenient for him to possess it now, God does not give it to him even by revelation. That which God reveals to him by his messengers, besides that which man is able to deduce for himself from the principle of sovereign justice, which is one of the essential attributes of divinity, is that all have the same starting-point; that all are created simple and ignorant, with an equal aptitude to progress by their individual activity; that all will attain the degree of perfection compatible with the creature by their personal efforts; that all, being children of the same Father, are objects of an equal solicitude; that there is no one more favored, or

better endowed than another, or excused from the labor which would be imposed upon others in order to attain the end.

8. In the same way as God has created material worlds during all time, he has equally created spiritual beings for the same length of time. One could rather conceive of spiritual beings without material worlds, than the latter without spiritual beings. Material worlds must furnish to spiritual beings the elements of activity for the development of their intelligence.

9. Progress is the normal condition of spiritual beings, and relative perfection the object to which they must attain. Now, as God has always created, and is always creating, there must be some spirits who have reached the highest point of the ladder of progress. Before this world was created, worlds had succeeded to worlds, and, when sprang forth from the chaos the elements which form this globe, space was peopled with spiritual beings in all degrees of advancement, from those who were just born into life to those who through countless ages had ranked among the pure spirits, commonly called angels.

10. *Union of the Spiritual and Material Principles.*  
— Matter being the object of the work of the spirit for the development of his faculties, it is necessary that it should be able to act upon matter: that is why man has come to inhabit it as the woodcutter lives in the forest. The former being at the same time the object and instrument of the labor, God, instead of uniting him to the rigid stone, created for his use organized, flexible bodies, capable of receiving all the impulsions of his will, and of lend-

ing themselves to all his movements. The body is then at the same time the envelope and the instrument of the spirit; and, as the latter acquires new aptitudes, it is re-invested with an appropriate envelope for the new kind of work which it must accomplish, as a workman is given finer utensils for his work as he becomes capable of performing more difficult tasks.

11. In order to be more exact, it is necessary to say that it is the spirit itself which fashions its envelope, and appropriates it to its new needs. It brings it toward perfection, develops and completes the organism by measure as it experiences the need of manifesting new qualities. In a word, it makes man in the image of God. God furnishes the materials for the work. Thus advanced races have an organism, or, one might say, utensils of a more refined order than the primitive races. Thus is explained the special seal which the spirit imprints on the expression of the face and manner.

12. As soon as the spirit is born into self-conscious life, it must for its advancement make use of its faculties, which are at first in a rudimentary state. That is why it is invested with a material envelope, appropriate to its state of intellectual infancy, — an envelope which it quits in order to be re-invested with another suited to its enlarged forces. Now, as from all time worlds have existed, and as these worlds have given birth to organized bodies proper to be the receptacle of spirit, from all time spirits have found what their degree of advancement was, and the necessary elements for their material life.

13. Bodies being exclusively material are subject

to the vicissitudes of matter. After having for some time operated, it becomes disorganized and decomposed. The vital principle, no longer finding an element for its activity, is extinguished, and the body dies. The spirit, for whom the body deprived of life is henceforth useless, leaves it, as one removes from a ruined house, or throws an article of wearing apparel aside, after it is no longer serviceable.

14. The body is then simply an envelope to receive the spirit: consequently, its origin and the materials of which it is composed matters little. Let the body of man be a special creation or not, it is certainly formed from the same elements as that of animals, animated by the same vital principle, and one might say heated by the same fire, as it is lighted by the same luminary, subject to the same vicissitudes and to the same needs: this is a point upon which there can be no controversy. Considering only matter and abstracting the spirit, man has nothing which distinguishes him from the animal; but there is an immediate change of aspect when the distinction between the habitation and the inhabitant is made. A great lord under his own roof, or dressed in the garments of a peasant, is a great lord. He is always the same man: it is not by his vestment that man is elevated above the brute, and made a unique being; it is by his spirit.

15. *Hypothesis upon the Origin of the Human Body.*  
—From the similitude which exists between the body of man and that of the monkey, certain physiologists have contended that the former was only a transformation of the latter. In that there is nothing impossible, although, if it is so, the dignity of man

will naturally suffer. Bodies of monkeys may have served very well for the vestment of the first human spirits necessarily undeveloped, who have been incarnated upon the earth, these garments being more appropriate to their needs and for the exercise of their faculties than the bodies of any other animal. Instead of a special robe having been made for the spirit, it may have found one already made. It may then have been dressed in the skin of the monkey without ceasing to be a human spirit, as man is sometimes dressed in animal skins without losing his manhood. It is well understood that this is only an hypothesis which is not based upon principle, but only given to show that such an origin of the body is not prejudicial to the spirit, which is the principal being, and that similitude of the body of man to that of the monkey does not imply equality between their respective spirits.

16. By admitting this hypothesis, one can say, that, under the influence of and by the effect of the intellectual activity of its new inhabitant, the envelope has been modified, embellished in details, preserving the general form, however, as a whole. The ameliorated bodies by procreating themselves have reproduced themselves in improved conditions, like grafted trees. They have given birth to a new species, which has been gradually removed from the primitive type according as the spirit has progressed. The spirit of the monkey, which has not been annihilated, has continued to beget bodies of monkeys for its use like wild fruit reproduced from wild fruit; and the human spirit has begotten bodies of men varying from the first established form. The trunk has

become divided, forked. It has produced a sprout, and this sprout has become an independent trunk. As there are no sudden transitions in nature, it is probable that the first men appearing on the earth have differed little from monkeys in exterior form, and probably no more in intelligence. There are still in our day savages, who, by the length of their arms and feet, and the formation of their heads, have so many ways like a monkey, that a hairy covering only is wanting to complete the resemblance.

17. *Incarnation of Spirits.* — Spiritism teaches us the mode of union between spirit and matter through incarnation. Spiritual essence is unlimited abstract being, which can have no direct action upon matter. A medium is necessary to it. This medium is the fluid envelope which makes in some sort an integral part of the spirit, a half material envelope, connecting matter with spirit by its ethereal nature. Like all matter, it is drawn from the universal cosmic fluid, which is submitted by this circumstance to a special modification. This envelope, designated peri-spirit, distinct from abstract being, makes of the spirit a concrete uncatchable being, not to be seized by thought. It renders it apt to act over tangible matter the same as all imponderable fluids, which every one knows are the most potent forces. The peri-spiritual fluid is, then, the bond between spirit and matter. During its union with the body it is the vehicle for transmitting thought to different parts of the organism, which acts under the impulsion of will; it also repels from the spirit sensations caused by external agents. Its conducting wires are the nerves

which are used, as in telegraphing, when the electric fluid has metallic wire for conductor.

18. When the spirit must embody itself in a human body in process of formation, a fluid connection, which is none other than an expansion of the peri-spirit, attaches it to the germ toward which it finds itself attracted by an irresistible force from the moment of conception. By measure, as the germ unfolds, the connection is withdrawn. Under the influence of the vital material principle of the germ, the peri-spirit, which possesses certain properties of matter, is united molecule by molecule with the forming body ; whence one can say that the spirit, by the medium of the peri-spirit, takes root in this germ, like a plant in the earth. When the germ is entirely developed, the union is complete, and then it is born into outward life. By contrary effect this union of the peri-spirit and flesh, which was accomplished under influence of the vital principle of the germ, when this principle ceases to act in consequence of the decay of the body, death is the result. The union which was only maintained by an active force ceases when this force ceases to act : then the peri-spirit detaches itself molecule by molecule, as it was united, and the spirit is rendered free. It is then not the departure of the spirit which causes the death of the body, but the death of the body which causes the departure of the spirit.

19. Spiritualism teaches us by the fact it introduces to our observation the phenomena accompanying this separation. It is sometimes rapid, easy, gentle, and insensible. At other times it is very slow, laborious, horribly painful, according to the

moral state of the spirit, and can endure for months.

20. A particular phenomenon equally signalized by observation always accompanies the incarnation of the spirit. As soon as the latter is seized by the connecting fluid which joins it to the germ, trouble comes to it. This trouble increases by measure as the connection is withdrawn, and in the last moments the spirit loses all consciousness of itself, in a way rendering it never a conscious witness of its birth. At the moment when the infant breathes, the spirit begins to recover its faculties, which are developed according as the organs which must serve for their manifestation are formed and consolidated. Here shines the wisdom which presides in all the works of creation. Too active faculties would bruise and abuse too delicate organs: that is why their energy is proportioned to the resisting force of these organs.

21. But, at the same time the spirit recovers its consciousness, it loses the remembrance of its past without losing the faculties, qualities, and aptitudes of anterior existences, — aptitudes which momentarily remained in a latent state, and which, in resuming their activity, come to aid it, and make it more and better than it was before. It gives new birth to anterior work; it is for it a new starting-point, a new ladder to climb, a new field of endeavor. Here again is manifest the goodness of the Creator; for the remembrance of a past often painful or humiliating, adding itself to the bitterness of a new existence, would trouble and cripple man. He remembers only that which he has learned, because that is useful to him. If sometimes he preserves a



vague recollection of past events, it is like the remembrance of a fugitive dream. He is then a new man, however ancient his spirit may be ; he marches over new fields aided by that which he has acquired. When he re-enters the spiritual life, his past is unrolled before his eyes, and he judges if he has well or ill employed his time.

22. There is no destruction of continuity in spirit-life, notwithstanding forgetfulness of a past. The spirit is always his individual self before, during, and after incarnation ; incarnation being only a special phase of his existence. This forgetfulness has only place during the life of exterior relations. During sleep, spirit disengages itself partially from fleshly bonds, is rendered free, and in spiritual life remembers itself. Its spiritual sight is not then so much obscured by matter.

23. Regarding humanity at the lowest round of the intellectual ladder with the most undeveloped savages, one demands if this is not the starting-point of the human soul. According to the opinion of some spiritual philosophers, the intelligent principle, distinct from the material, is individualized and elaborated by passing through the different degrees of animal life. It is there that the soul tries life, and first develops its faculties by exercise : this would be, so to say, its time of incubation. Arrived at the degree of development comporting with this state, it receives special faculties, which constitute the human soul : there would thus be a spiritual affiliation, as there is a corporal one. This system, founded upon the grand law of unity, which presides in all creation, has much to commend it. It is agreeable to the justice and

goodness of the Creator. It gives an issue, an object, a destiny to animals which are no more disinherited beings, but find in the future reserved to them a compensation for their sufferings.

That which constitutes spiritual man is not his origin, but the special attributes with which he is endowed at his *entrée* into humanity, attributes which transform and make of him a distinct being, as the delicious fruit is distinct from the bitter root whence it sprang. Because he had passed through the experience of animality, man would be no less a man. He would be no more an animal than the fruit is a root, as the wise man is not the foetus by which he has made his *début* into the world. But this system raises numerous questions, for which there is no opportunity of discussing whys and wherefores no more than of examining the different hypotheses which have been made on this subject. Without then searching again for the origin of the soul, and the vicissitudes through which it has been able to pass, we take it at its *entrée* into humanity, at the point where, endowed with moral sense and free will, it commences to realize the responsibility of its acts.

24. The necessity for the incarnated spirit to provide for the nourishment of the body, for its security and well-being, the constraint of applying its faculties in research, in exercising and developing them, renders its union with matter useful for its advancement: that is why incarnation is a necessity. Besides, by the intelligent work it accomplishes to its profit over matter, it aids in the transformation and material progress of the globe it inhabits: thus, by progressing itself, it concurs with the work of the Creator, of whom it is the agent.

25. But the incarnation of the spirit is neither constant nor perpetual. It is only transitory. In leaving a body it does not take another instantaneously. During a greater or less considerable lapse of time, it lives the spiritual life, which is its normal life, in such a way that the sum of the time passed in the different incarnations is small, compared to that it passes in the free spiritual state. In the interval between incarnations the spirit progresses in this sense, that he puts to profit for his advancement the knowledge and experience acquired during material life. We speak of the spirit arrived at the state of a human soul, having liberty of action, and realization of his acts.

He examines that which he has done during his terrestrial sojourn, passes in review that which he has learned, recognizes his faults, arranges his plans, forms resolutions with which he expects to guide himself in a new existence by striving to do better. Thus each existence is a step in advance in the way of progress, a sort of school of application. Incarnation is not then normally a punishment for the spirit, as some have thought it, but an inherent condition and a means of progress. By measure, as the spirit progresses morally, he dematerializes himself; that is to say, that, preserving himself from the influence of matter, he purifies himself, his life becomes spiritualized, his faculties and perceptions are extended, his happiness is by reason of accomplished progress.

But, as he acts by virtue of his free will, he can, by negligence or bad desire, retard his advancement. He prolongs, therefore, the duration of his material incarnations, which become then for him a punish-

ment, since by his own fault he remains in the inferior ranks, obliged to recommence the same task. It depends then upon spirit to abridge by its work of self-purification the duration of the period of its incarnations.

26. The material progress of a globe follows the moral progress of its inhabitants. Now, as the creation of worlds and spirits is incessant, as the latter progress with greater or less rapidity by reason of their free will, the result is, that there are some worlds of considerable antiquity at different degrees of spiritual and physical advancement, where incarnation is more or less material, and where, consequently, the work for the spirit is more or less rude.

At this point of view the earth is one of the least advanced. Peopled by spirits relatively inferior, corporal life is more painful than on many other worlds. On some planets things are still less developed. There life is more painful still than upon this earth; and for the inhabitants of such worlds this earth would be relatively a happy world.

27. When the spirits have acquired over a world the degree of progress comporting with the state of that world, they quit it in order to dwell upon another more advanced, where they acquire new knowledge, and so on in succession until incarnation, in a material body, being no longer of use to them, they live exclusively in the spiritual life, where they still progress in other ways and by other means. Arrived at the culminal point of progress, they enjoy supreme felicity. Admitted into the counsels of the Almighty, they have his thought, and become his messengers, his direct ministers for the government of worlds, hav-

ing under their charge spirits of various degrees of advancement.

Thus all spirits, incarnate or otherwise, of whatever degree of the hierarchy to which they belong, from the lowest to the highest, have their attributions in the great mechanism of the universe. All are useful to the whole : at the same time they are useful to themselves. To the least advanced is incumbent a material task, a simple manœuvre, at first unconscious, then gradually intelligent. Everywhere there is activity in the spiritual world ; nowhere is there useless idleness. The collective body of spirits is, in a manner, the soul of the universe : it is the spiritual element which acts over all and through all, under the impulsion of the divine thought. Without this element, there is only inert matter, without object, without intelligence, without other motor power than material forces, which leave a crowd of insoluble problems. By the action of the individual spiritual element, all has an object, a reason for being ; all explains itself : that is why, without spirituality, one is hurled against insurmountable difficulties.

28. When the earth is found in climatic condition, suited to the existence of the human species, spirits come to be incarnated there ; and they admit that they have found envelopes already made, which they have appropriated to their use. One can comprehend that they have simultaneously been born in many parts of the globe.

29. Although the first who came must have been very undeveloped, and were therefore enveloped in very imperfect bodies, there must have been between them appreciable differences in character and aptitude

according to the degree of their moral and intellectual development. Similar spirits are naturally grouped by analogy and sympathy. The earth has thus been peopled with different categories of spirits, more or less desirous of or rebellious against progress. Bodies receiving the imprint of the character of the spirit, and these bodies begetting themselves by reason of their respective type, the result is different races physically and morally. Similar spirits, continuing to incarnate themselves by preference among their own kind, have perpetuated a distinctive moral and physical character among races and nations, who do not lose them except by the fusion and progress of spirits. (*"Revue Spirite,"* July, 1860, p. 198: *"Phrenology and Physiognomy."*)

30. One can compare the spirits who have come to people the earth to troops of emigrants of diverse origin who came to establish themselves on a virgin soil. They find there wood and stone with which to make habitations, and each one gives to his own a special seal, according to the degree of his knowledge and ingenuity. They group themselves by reason of analogy, of origin, and taste. These groups end in by time forming tribes, then nations, each having its own customs and characters.

31. Progress has not then been uniform among all the human species. The most intelligent races have naturally advanced before others, without counting spirits newly born into the spiritual life, who, having come to incarnate themselves on earth among the first arrivals, render the differences in progress more sensible. It would be impossible, indeed, to give the same antiquity of creation to savages, scarcely dis-

ting from monkeys, as to the Chinese, and still less to civilized Europeans. These spirits of savages, however, belong also to humanity. They will attain some day the level of their elders; but this will certainly not be in the bodies of the same physical race, improper to a certain intellectual and moral development. When the instrument will no more be *en rapport* with their development, they will emigrate from this place, in order to incarnate themselves in one of a superior character, and so on in succession until they have conquered all the terrestrial grades; after which they will quit the earth to pass into worlds more and more advanced. (“Revue Spirite,” April, 1862, p. 97: “Perfection of the Negro Race.”)

32. *Re-Incarnation.* — The principle of re-incarnation is the natural consequence of the law of progress. Without re-incarnation, how is it possible to explain the difference which exists between the present social state of the world and that of barbarous times? If souls have been created at the same time as bodies, those which are born to-day are all as new, all as primitive, as those who lived a thousand years ago. Let us add, that there is not between them any connection, no necessary relation; that they are completely independent of one another. Why, then, should the souls of to-day be better endowed by God than their predecessors? Why have they better comprehensions, purer instincts, gentler manners? Why have they knowledge of certain things without having learned them? We defy any one to dispute re-incarnation without at least admitting that God created souls of diverse qualities, some superior to others, according to time and place, — a proposition

irreconcilable with sovereign justice. Say, to the contrary, that souls of to-day have already lived in remote times, that they have been barbarous as their age, but that they have progressed; that to each new existence they carry the acquisition of anterior existences; that consequently the souls of civilized times are not souls which have been created superior, but which have perfected themselves with time, and you will have the only plausible explanation of the cause of social progress. ("Book of Spirits" or "Spirits' Book," chaps. IV. and V.)<sup>1</sup>

This doctrine would be admissible if all the inhabitants of the earth were on the same intellectual and moral level. They would then be able to progress only by going to another world, and their re-embodiment on this earth would be useless. Now God does nothing uselessly. One finds all degrees of intelligence and morality, from the wildness of the animal to that of the most civilized people: it offers a vast field to progress. One would ask why the savage should have to seek elsewhere the degree above him, when he can find it beside him, and soon, from stage to stage in this world of human progress? why should he go to another world for stages of progress which he can find in this, as there are different degrees of advancement not only between nation and nation, but in the same nation and in the same family? If it were thus, God would have done a useless thing in placing ignorance and knowledge side by side, barbarism and civilization, good and evil, as neighbors;

<sup>1</sup> Some people think that the different existences of the soul are accomplished by going from world to world, appearing only once upon each.



while it is precisely this contact which makes the backward ones advance. There is then no more necessity for souls to change worlds at each re-incarnation, than there is for a student to change colleges in going from class to class. Far from being an incentive to progress, it would retard it; for the spirit would be deprived of the examples offered him by those of superior degree, and of the possibility of repairing wrongs which he has done in the same place, and in respect to the persons whom he has injured, — a possibility which is for him the most powerful means for moral advancement. After a short cohabitation spirits would disperse, and become strangers to one another. The ties of family and friendship, not having time to consolidate, would be broken.

That the spirits leave a world when they can acquire nothing more upon it for one more advanced, must be a truth, and is so without doubt. If they leave before having thoroughly graduated from one stage to another, it is, without doubt, in individual cases which God weighs in his wisdom. All has an object in creation, else God would neither be prudent nor wise. Now, if the earth were the theatre for only one incarnation of each soul, of what use would it be for children who die in infancy to come to pass only a few months, sometimes hours, during which they acquire nothing? — the same of idiots and fools. A theory is only good when it solves all the questions it raises. The question of premature deaths has been a stumbling-block for all doctrines, except for the Spiritist, which alone solves it rationally. For those to whom is furnished a normal career on earth there is a real advantage when finding themselves

again occupants of the same place in order to continue there something they have there left undone, often in the same family, or in contact with the same persons, in order to repair the evil they have done, or to submit to the pain of retribution.

33. *Emigration and Immigration of Spirits.* — In the interval between their material existences, spirits live in an erratic state, and compose the ambient spiritual population of the globe. By deaths and births these two populations are incessantly mingled. There is then daily emigration from the material to the spiritual world, and immigrations from the spiritual into the material world. This is the normal state of existence.

34. At certain epochs regulated by divine wisdom, these emigrations and immigrations take place *en masse* in consequence of great revolutions, causing great numbers of human beings to change worlds, which are soon replaced by equivalent incarnations. It is then necessary to consider destructive scourges and inundations as collective arrivals and departures, — providential means of renewing the material population of the globe by replenishing it by the introduction of new and purer spiritual elements. If in these catastrophes there is a great destruction of bodies, they are only torn vestments; but no spirit perishes. They only change place. Instead of departing alone, they go in numbers, which is the whole difference from the ordinary. By one cause or another they must inevitably depart sooner or later. The rapid and almost instantaneous renovations which take in the spiritual element of the population, in consequence of destructive scourges, hasten social prog-

ress. Without emigrations and immigrations, which from time to time give a violent impulsion, it would march very slowly. It is remarkable that all great calamities which decimate populations are always followed by an era of marked spiritual, intellectual, and physical progress in the social state of the nations in which they occur. Their object is to produce a great change in the spiritual, which is the normal and active, population of the globe.

35. This transfusion, which takes place between the incarnated and spiritual population of the same globe, operates in the same way between different worlds, either individually in normal conditions or by masses in special circumstances. There are then collective emigrations and immigrations from one world to another. There results from it the introduction into the population of the globe entirely new elements, new races of spirits coming to mingle with existing races, constituting new races of men. Now, as spirits never lose any thing they have once acquired, they carry with them the intelligence and intuition of the knowledge they possess. They impress, consequently, their character on the corporal race they come to animate. There is no need of new bodies created for their especial use. Since the corporal species exist, they find them already to receive them. In arriving upon the earth, they are at first a part of its spiritual population; then incarnate themselves like others.

36. *The Adamic Race.* — The Adamic race, according to the teachings of the spirits, is due to one of these great immigrations, where one of these great colonies of spirits came from another sphere, which has given

birth to the race symbolized in the person of Adam, and for this reason named Adamic. When they arrived, the earth had been peopled from time immemorial, as America had been when Europeans reached its shores.

The Adamic race, more advanced than those which had preceded it upon the earth, is indeed the most intelligent. It is that race which has pushed all other races forward. Genesis shows us it from its *début* to be industrious, apt in all the arts and sciences, without having passed through an intellectual infancy, which is not the experience of primitive races. This accords with the opinions of spirits that it had already progressed upon other worlds, all proves that it did not originate, and is not ancient, upon the earth; and nothing opposes itself to the idea that it might have only been here since a few thousand years, which would be in contradiction neither to geological facts nor to anthropological observations, but would tend to the contrary to confirm them.

37. The doctrine which proceeds from the idea of human beings of one individuality alone six thousand years old is not admissible in the present state of knowledge. The principal considerations which contradict it are drawn from physical and moral order.

38. At a physiological point of view, certain races present particular characteristics, which do not allow of a common origin being assigned to them. There are differences which are evidently not produced by climatic variations, since white people who are produced in a land of negroes do not become black. The heat of the sun broils and burns the

skin, but has never transformed a white man into a negro, flattened the nose, changed the form of the features of the face, or rendered the hair crimped and woolly, naturally long and silky. One knows to-day that the color of the negro is produced by a peculiar tissue under the skin, appertaining to the species.

It is necessary then to consider the Negro, Mongolian, and Caucasian races as having each its own particular origin, and of having been born successively or simultaneously upon different parts of the globe; then increase has produced a mixed secondary race. The physiological characters of primitive races are the evident indications that they are the result of special types. The same considerations apply then to man, as well as to animals, as to the plurality of stocks.

39. Adam and his descendants are represented in Genesis as men essentially intelligent, since from the second generation they have built cities, cultivated the earth, and worked with metals. Their progress in the arts and sciences was at all times rapid and constant.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> When, in the *Revue* of January, 1862, we published an article on the interpretation of the doctrine of fallen angels, we presented this theory only as an hypothesis, having in its support found no higher authority than controvertible personal opinion. From that time till the present we have lacked the necessary materials out of which to construct an absolute affirmative proposition. We gave this title to that essay for the sake of provoking research, fully determined either to abandon or modify the theory if necessity should arise. To-day this theory has been submitted to the trial of universal control. Not only has it been indorsed by a great majority of spirits as most rational and most in accord with the sovereign justice of God, but has been directly confirmed by the greater part of the instructions given by the spirits themselves on this subject. It is identical with that which explains the origin of the Adamic race.

We cannot, therefore, conclude that a race so numerous could have proceeded, thus highly gifted, from a people of most rudimentary intelligence who were still in the days of simple animality, and at the same time have lost all trace of their descent, so that they had not even a traditional memory of their ancestors. A difference so radical in intellectual abilities, and also in moral development, proves, with, no small degree of evidence, that this race had a distinct origin.

40. Independently of geologic facts, the proof of the existence of man upon the earth before the epoch fixed by Genesis is drawn from the population of the globe. Without alluding to Chinese chronology, which carries men back, it is said, thirty thousand years, more authentic documents declare that Egypt, India, and other countries were populous and in a flourishing condition at least three thousand years B.C.; consequently only one thousand years after the creation of the first man, according to biblical chronology. These documents, as well as recent observations, leave no room for doubt in our minds to-day that there were inhabitants at a remote period on both hemispheres, and that relations existed between America and ancient Egypt. From this we are forced to conclude that America was already peopled at that epoch. It would be folly to admit that in one thousand years the posterity of a single man could cover so large a portion of the earth; for such amazing fecundity is contrary to all the laws of anthropology.

Genesis at the same time attributes to the original descendants of Adam no abnormal fecundity: on the

contrary, it gives us a very ordinary account of their number until the time of Noah.

41. The impossibility of such multiplication is made still more evident, if we admit with Genesis that the deluge destroyed *all the human race*, with the exception of Noah and his immediate family, which was not numerous in the year of the world 1656, or 2348 B.C. It cannot thus, in reality, be true that the present population of the globe dates only from Noah, or from about his time. History designates Menes king of Egypt 642 years after the deluge. According to the Hebrew records, they had established themselves there at that time. It cannot be that this powerful empire could have been peopled in so short a time, besides other countries, in six centuries by the sole descendants of Noah: such a supposition is decidedly inadmissible. Let us, moreover, observe that the Egyptians received the Hebrews as strangers. It would be contrary to reason to suppose that they had lost all remembrance of their common origin and of their reunion; for we know that at that time they religiously kept records and monuments of their history. Exact logic, corroborated by stern facts, clearly shows in the most unequivocal manner that man has existed on earth through an indefinitely long period of time, — certainly that the origin of the race is greatly anterior to the epoch assigned by Genesis.

It is the same with the doctrine of the diversity of primitive sources. In order to demonstrate the impossibility of a proposition being a correct one, it must be shown that a contrary proposition is demonstrable. If geology discovers authentic traces of

the presence of man before the great diluvian period, the demonstration becomes still more absolute.

42. *Doctrine of Fallen Angels, and of Paradise Lost.*

—The word “angel,” like many others, has many meanings. It can be differently applied, both in a good and evil sense: thus we may speak of the good angels and the bad angels, an angel of light and an angel of darkness. It therefore, in its general or broad acceptation, means simply a *spirit*. Angels should not be regarded as distinct from human beings, created perfect, but as spirits who have arrived at a state of perfection by their own efforts, in accordance with the law governing all creatures. If the angels were created perfect, rebellion against God being an evidence of imperfection, those who rebelled could not have been angels at all. Rebellion against God is inconceivable in connection with beings created perfect, in as much as it compels the inference that the rebellions are still imperfect.

Etymologically the word “angel” (from the Greek *aggêlos*) signifies “one who is sent,” “a messenger.” Now it is irrational to suppose that God has selected his special messengers from among those who are sufficiently imperfect to revolt against him.

43. Until spirits have attained to a certain degree of perfection, they are subject to falling; they are in a state of probation, the state of embodied spirits.

To fall (or to fail) is to disobey the law of God, the divine law which is written in the hearts of all men, which is a revelation given to all that they may know what they ought to do. A spirit only gradually, and by measure as his intelligence develops,



comprehends the moral law. Whosoever breaks this law ignorantly acquires needed experience through the penalty attached to his mistake. Responsibility is always relative, and according to knowledge. On the part of one whose intelligence is more highly developed, who, having all the advantages of moral light, voluntarily breaks the law, does conscious evil. Knowing the wrong of his conduct, he is a rebel, revolting against the author of the law.

44. Worlds advance physically by the transformations of matter, and morally by the purification of the spirits who inhabit them. Goodness can only be realized in the predominance of good over evil, and the predominance of good results from the moral progress made by spirits. Intellectual progress will not suffice, because with knowledge it is possible to work harm. When a world has arrived at one of its periods of transformation, and is ready to rise in the universal hierarchy, changes are operating, affecting both its embodied and disembodied population. At the time then when a world has reached one of its transformation crises which mark the stages of its ascent in the hierarchy, changes of a marked character take place among its embodied and disembodied inhabitants, causing extensive emigrations and immigrations.

Those who, notwithstanding their intelligence and knowledge, have continued in evil in their revolt against God and his laws, would be henceforth obstacles in the path of further moral progress, a permanent source of trouble, disturbing the tranquillity and well-being of the virtuous. For this reason are they sent forth into less advanced worlds,

— worlds in which they can utilize their intelligence and the results of their acquired knowledge in furthering the advancement of those among whom they are called to live, at the same time expiating in a series of laborious existences, by hard work, their past faults and their wilful obstinacy. How will it fare with them among colonies so strange to them, tribes still in barbaric infancy? Will not such surroundings make the lives of these exiled angels or spirits lives of expiation indeed? And the world from which they have been sent forth, will it not appear to them a lost paradise?

Was it not to them a delightful place in comparison to that whither they are banished for centuries, until they have merited deliverance from it. The vague intuitive remembrance they preserve is to them like a distant *mirage*, which recalls to them what they have lost by their fault.

45. But, while the wicked have departed from the world they inhabited, they are replaced by higher spirits, who have come, perhaps, from the disembodied ones of this same world, perhaps from a less advanced world their merits have allowed them to leave, and for which their new abode is a recompense. The spiritual population being thus renewed and purged of its lower elements at the end of an age, the moral state of the world is ameliorated. These changes are sometimes partial; i.e., limited to a race. At other times they are general when a period of renovation for the globe has arrived.

46. The Adamic race has all the characteristics of a proscribed race. The spirits forming part of it have been exiled upon the already peopled earth,

but peopled by primitive men yet in ignorance, to whom their mission was to effect their progress by carrying among them the light of a developed intelligence.

Is it not indeed the place that this race has filled until now? Their intellectual superiority proves that the world from which they came was more advanced than this earth; but that world entering upon a new phase of progress, these spirits, by their obstinacy not placing themselves at the required height, would have been a hinderance to the providential march of events. That is why they were expelled; while others who have merited them have taken their places. By placing this race upon this earth of toil and suffering, God was just in saying to it, "Thou shalt earn thy bread by the sweat of thy brow." In his mercy he promised to send them a Saviour; i.e., he who will enlighten them concerning the route from a state of misery to angelic felicity. This Saviour he has sent to them in the person of Christ, who has taught the law of love, charity being unknown to them, and who becomes to them the veritable anchor of salvation.

Christ has not only taught the law, but has given a practical example of it by his mercy, his humility, his patient suffering without murmur, the most ignominious treatment, and the severest pains. In order that such a mission should be perfectly accomplished, a spirit above human weakness was necessary.

It is equally with a view to the advancement of humanity in a determined sense that some superior spirits who have not all the qualities of Christ are embodied from to time on the earth, in order to ac-

comply with definite missions which aid in their own advancement, if they fulfil them according to the will of the Creator.

47. Without re-incarnation the mission of Christ, as well as the promise made by God, would be useless. Let us suppose that the soul of man is created at the birth of his body, and that it only once appears, and then disappears from the earth. There is no relation between those who have come from Adam to Jesus, neither between those who have been born since: they are all strangers to one another. The promise of a Saviour made by God could not apply to the descendants of Adam if their souls were not yet created. In order that the mission of Christ should fulfil the divine word, it was necessary that it should be applied to the identical souls. If these are new souls, they cannot be stained with the fault of the first father, who is only the material and not the spiritual parent: otherwise God must have created souls stained with sin they could not have committed. The common doctrine of original sin implies the necessity of a connection between the souls living on earth in the days of Christ and those of the time of Adam, and consequently of re-incarnation. Suppose that all these souls formed a part of the colony who came to earth in the days of Adam, and that they were stained with the sin which had expelled them from a brighter world, and you will find a rational interpretation of original sin, each individual's own sin, and not the result of the fall of another, whom he has never known. Say that these spirits are reborn in different parts of the earth into corporeal life, that they may progress and purify themselves; that Christ

came to enlighten these same souls not only with reference to their past, but also with a view to their ulterior lives: and then only do you endow his mission with an object acceptable to the reason.

48. A familiar example striking by its analogy will cause the principles just exposed to be better understood. May 24, 1861, the frigate "Iphigenia" conducted to New Caledonia a company composed of two hundred and ninety-one men. The commander of the colony addressed them on their arrival an order couched in these words:—

"At your entrance into this distant land, you already comprehend the work which is expected of you. By the example of our brave soldiers of the marine service, serving under your eyes, you will aid us to carry with *éclat* in the midst of the savage tribes of New Caledonia the torch of civilization.

"Is it not a beautiful and noble mission to which I call you? You will fulfil it worthily. Listen to the voice and counsels of your leaders. I am at their head. Let my words be well understood. The choice of your commander, of your officers, of your under-officers, and corporals, is a sure guaranty of all the efforts which will be put forth to make of you excellent soldiers. I say more, to elevate you to the height of good citizens, and to transform you into honorable colonists, if you but desire it. Your discipline is severe: it must be so. Placed in our hands it will be firm and inflexible, — you know it well, — but also just and paternal. It shall know how to discover all error, vice, and degradation."

Here then are men expelled for their bad conduct from a civilized country, and sent for punishment

among barbarous people. What says the chief to them? —

“You have broken the laws of your country; you have caused trouble and scandal, and they have exiled you from it. They send you here; but you can retrieve your past. You can by labor create for yourselves here an honorable position, and become honest citizens. You have a beautiful mission to fulfil here, — that of carrying civilization among these savage tribes. The discipline will be severe but just; and we shall know how to distinguish those who will conduct themselves well.”

For these men thus thrown upon the bosom of barbarism, is not the mother country a paradise lost to them by their rebellion against its laws? In this distant land are they not fallen angels? The language of the chief, is it not that which God makes spirits exiled upon the earth to hear? You have disobeyed my laws; and it is for that offence that I have banished you from a world in which you could live happily and in peace. Here you will be condemned to work; but you will be able by your good conduct to merit your pardon, and re-enter the country you have forfeited by your sin, — i.e., heaven.

49. At first the idea of a downfall would appear contradictory to that of the non-retrograde movements of the spirit; but it is necessary to consider that it carries them toward a return to the primitive state. The spirit, although in an inferior position, loses nothing he has once acquired. His moral and intellectual development remains, whatever may be the condition in which he finds himself. He is in the position of a man of the world condemned to the

convicts' prison by his misdeeds. Certainly, he has fallen in a social sense; but the fall makes him neither imbecile nor ignorant.

50. Does any one believe that the men sent to New Caledonia are to be suddenly transformed into models of virtue? that they will all at once abjure their past errors? One cannot know humanity if he supposes that. For the same reason the spirits of the Adamic race, once transplanted upon the soil of exile, have not been instantaneously despoiled of pride and depraved instincts; for a long time they have preserved the tendencies of their origin, the remains of the old leaven. Now, is this not original sin? The stain that they bring with them at birth is not that from the race of spirits culpable and punished by reason of their own belongings, — a spot which they can efface by such expiation as renovates their moral being. Original sin, considered as the result of another's fault, is nonsensical, and opposed utterly to divine justice; considered, on the contrary, as a consequence and relic of a first imperfection of the individual, is not alone admitted by reason, but one finds justice in the responsibility which flows from it.

## CHAPTER XII.

MOSAIC GENESIS. — SIX DAYS. — PARADISE LOST.

1. *Six Days.* — CHAP. I. — 1. In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.

2. The earth was without form, and void ; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

3. Then God said, Let there be light : and there was light.

4. And God saw the light, that it was good : and God divided the light from the darkness.

5. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.

6. And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters.

7. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament : and it was so.

8. And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day.

9. And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered unto one place, and let dry land appear : and it was so.



10. God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good.

11. And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit-tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so.

12. And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself: and God saw that it was good.

13. And the evening and the morning were the third day.

14. And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years:

15. And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so.

16. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also.

17. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth,

18. And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good.

19. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

20. And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven.

21. And God created great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good.

22. And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let fowl multiply in the earth.

23. And the evening and the morning were the fifth day.

24. And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was so.

25. And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good.

26. And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

27. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

28. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

29. And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the

earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat.

30. And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so.

31. And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

CHAP. II.—1. Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them.

2. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made.

3. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.

4. These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens,

5. And every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew: for the Lord God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground.

6. But there went up a mist from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground.

7. And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

8. And the Lord God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed.

2. After the developments explained in the pre-

ceding chapters concerning the origin and constitution of the universe, according to knowledge furnished by science concerning the material part, and according to Spiritism for the spiritual, it is useful to place beside it the text of the Mosaic Genesis, in order that a comparison may be established, and one may judge by knowledge. Some supplementary explications will suffice to make the parts which need special explanation to be understood.

3. Upon some points there is certainly a remarkable agreement between science and Moses; but it would be an error to imagine it sufficient to substitute for six days of twenty-four hours each six periods of time (duration unknown) in order to find a complete analogy.

It would be no less an error to conclude that, save the allegorical sense of a few words, Genesis and science do not follow each other step by step, and are only a paraphrase of one another.

4. Let us remark at first, in addition to what has been said already (see chap. VII., p. 172), that the number of the geological periods is not arbitrarily six, since they include more than twenty-five very characteristic formations. This number marks only the great general phases. It has been adopted principally to approach to the letter of the biblical text as nearly as possible, at an epoch when it was believed to be a duty to control science by the Bible.

That is why the authors of the great majority of theories of cosmogony, with a view to making their productions more easily accepted, have been forced to place themselves in accord with the sacred text.

When science leans upon the experimental method, she feels stronger, and becomes emancipated. To-day it is the Bible which is controlled by science.

On the other hand, exact geology, taking its point of departure only from the formation of granite rocks, does not include in the number of its periods the primitive state of the earth. It does not occupy itself with sun, moon, and stars, nor with that portion of Genesis which belongs to astronomy. In order to deal fairly with Genesis, it agrees to add a primary period embracing this order of phenomena, which might be called the astronomical period. Besides, the diluvial period is not considered by all geologists as a distinct period, but as a transitory fact which has not notably changed the climatic state of the globe, neither marked a new phase in the vegetable or animal species, since, with few exceptions, nearly the same species have been found to exist before and after the deluge. One can thus make an abstract without detracting from truth.

5. The following table of comparison, in which is a *résumé* of the phenomena characterizing each one of the six periods, permits of embracing the whole, and enables one to decide between the statements of science and Genesis:—

SCIENCE.	GENESIS.
1. <i>Astronomical Period.</i>	<i>First Day.</i>
Agglomeration of universal cosmic matter upon a point of space in a nebula which has received birth by the condensation of matter from diverse points, from the sun, stars,	The heavens and the earth. Light.

## SCIENCE.

moon, earth, and all planets. Primitive fluid and incandescent state of the earth. Dense atmosphere charged with vapor and volatile matter.

*2. Primary Period.*

Hardening of earth's surface by cooling process; formation of granite beds. Atmosphere thick and burning, impenetrable to sun's rays. Gradual precipitation of water and solid volatile substances in the air. Absence of all organic life.

*3. Transition Period.*

The waters cover all the surface of the globe. First deposits of sediment formed by waters. Humid heat. Sun commences to pierce foggy atmosphere. First organized beings, of most rudimentary constitution, — lichens, mosses, ferns, herbaceous plants. Colossal vegetation. First marine animals, — jelly-fish and shell-fish. Coal deposits.

*4. Secondary Period.*

Surface of earth very uneven, waters not very deep, and forming marshes on earth. Temperature less burning, purer atmosphere; considerable calcareous deposits, vegetation less colossal; new species, woody plants; first trees. Fishes, jelly and shell; turtles, great

## GENESIS.

*Second Day.*

The firmament. Separation of waters under firmament from those above it.

*Third Day.*

The waters under the firmament are gathered together. Dry land appears. The earth and sea. Plants.

*Fourth Day.*

Sun, moon, stars.

SCIENCE.	GENESIS.
aquatic and amphibious reptiles.	
5. <i>Tertiary Period.</i> Great uprising of solid crust, formation of continents; retreat of waters into lower places, formation of seas. Purified atmosphere; present temperature by solar heat. Gigantic terrestrial animals; vegetables and animals as at present; birds. Universal deluge.	<i>Fifth Day.</i> Fishes and birds.
6. <i>Post-Diluvial Period.</i> Alluvial beds. Present vegetables and animals. Man.	<i>Sixth Day.</i> Terrestrial animals. <b>Man.</b>

6. The first fact which is brought to light by the above comparative table is, that the work performed during the six comparative "days" does not correspond in an exact way, as many believe, to each of the six geological periods. The most remarkable agreement is in the order of succession of organic beings, which is nearly identical, and in the appearance of man at the last. Now that is an important concordance. There is also a coincidence, not in the numerical order of periods, but in the passage where it is said that on the third day the waters under the firmament were gathered into one heap, and dry land appeared. It is the acknowledgment of what actually took place in the tertiary period, when, by the uprising of the solid crust, oceans and continents were formed. It was then that terrestrial animals first appeared, both according to Genesis and geology.

7. When Moses declares that creation was per-

fectured in six days, did he mean days twenty-four hours long? or has he used the word in its sense of indeterminate time? The Hebrew word standing for "day" has this double acceptation: the first hypothesis is the more probable. The specification of day and night, which is attached to each of these six periods, gives reason for the supposition that he meant ordinary days. One cannot doubt this, when he says (verse 5), "He gave to light the name of day, and to darkness the name of night; and the evening and the morning made the first day." The latter can evidently apply only to a day of twenty-four hours divided by light and darkness. The sense is still more evident (verse 17), where, in speaking of sun, moon, and stars, he placed them in the firmament to give light unto the earth, to rule over day and night, and separate light from darkness; and the evening and the morning constituted the fourth day. Besides, it is certainly stated that creation was effected in a miraculous manner; and, since the ancients believed in miracles, they could readily believe that the earth was formed in a hundred and forty-four hours, particularly at a time when men were totally ignorant of natural laws. This belief has been shared by all civilized people, until geology has furnished documentary evidence in proof of its impossibility.

8. One of the most contested points in Genesis is that of the creation of the sun after light had appeared. They have sought to explain by means of geologic discoveries, by stating that, at the time of its first formation, the terrestrial atmosphere, being charged with dense and opaque vapors, did



not allow of the sun's being visible, though the sun previously existed. This reason would perhaps be admissible had there been inhabitants to judge of the presence or absence of the sun. Now, according to Moses, at this epoch there were only plants upon the earth which could not grow and multiply without the action of solar heat. There is evidently an anachronism in the order that Moses assigns to the creation of the sun; but involuntarily, or otherwise, he has stated facts correctly when declaring that light preceded the sun.

The sun is not the source of universal light, but a concentration of the luminous element at one point, otherwise called fluid, which in certain circumstances acquires luminous properties. This fluid, which is the cause, must necessarily exist prior to the sun, which is its effect. The sun is a cause for the light which it expands, but is an effect of that which it has received. In an obscure chamber a lighted candle is a little sun. What has one accomplished by lighting the candle? He has developed the illuminating property of the luminous fluid, and has concentrated this fluid upon one point. The candle is the cause of the light expanded in the chamber; but, if the luminous principle had not existed before the candle, the latter could not have been lighted. It is so with the sun. The error has arisen in the false idea, that has long been conceived, that the entire universe began with the earth, and it has not been understood how the sun could be created after light.

It is known now, however, that, before our sun and earth were created, millions of suns and earths

existed which enjoyed light. The assertion of Moses is, then, exact in principle: it is only false when it declares that the earth was created before the sun. The earth being subject to the sun in its movement of translation must have been formed after it. That is something of which Moses was ignorant, since he was ignorant of the law of gravitation.

The same thought is met with in the Genesis of the ancient Persians. In the first chapter of the Vendedas, Ormuzd, recounting the origin of the world, says, "I created light, which gave light to the sun, the moon, and the stars" ("Dictionary of Universal Mythology"). The form is here clearer and more scientific than that in the Pentateuch, and needs no commentary.

9. Moses partook evidently of the most primitive beliefs concerning cosmogony. Like many of his time, he believed in the solidity of the celestial vault, and of superior reservoirs for water. This thought has been expressed without allegory or ambiguity in this passage (verses 6 and following): "God said, Let the firmament be in the midst of the waters, and let the waters be separated from the waters." God made the firmament in the midst of the waters, and separated the waters under it from those above it. (See chap. V., "Systems of Ancient and Modern Worlds," Nos. 3, 4, 5). An ancient belief made matter an element, the generative primitive element. Moses does not speak of the creation of matter, which seems to have existed previously to the first creation, according to his theory.

The darkness covered the deep; i.e., the depths of space that the imagination vaguely depicted as dark

watery wastes, before the creation of light. That is why the Spirit of God, according to Moses, moved upon the waters. The earth's being formed in the midst of water necessitated its isolation. It was supposed that God made the firmament a solid vault, separating the waters above from those under the earth. In order to comprehend certain parts of Genesis, it is necessary to place ourselves at that point of view from which we can watch the reflection of the ideas entertained on cosmogony at that time.

10. Since the advancement of the physical sciences and astronomy, such a doctrine cannot be supported.<sup>1</sup> Moses, however, attributes these words to God himself; but in doing so he is guilty of one or two serious mistakes. Either he was deceived by God in the record he gave of his work, or this recital is not a divine revelation. The first supposition is inadmissible. We must therefore conclude that Moses simply gave utterance to his own ideas. (See chap. I.)

11. Moses is more nearly right when he says that God formed man out of the dust of the earth.<sup>2</sup> Science proves to us, in fact (see chap. X.), that the human body is composed of the elements gathered up in inorganic forms of matter, otherwise called the dust or mud of the earth.

<sup>1</sup> Much which is palpably erroneous must be the result of such a belief; but still, in our days, children's doubts are lulled to rest as they are told by their instructors that it is all a sacred verity. It is only with fear and trembling that their teachers will venture to give to these writings a timid interpretation. How can we wonder that incredulity has at last taken them by storm?

<sup>2</sup> The Hebrew word *haadam*, "man," which gives us Adam, and the Hebrew word *haadama*, "earth," are from the same root.

The formation of a woman from one of Adam's ribs is an allegory, apparently puerile if we consider only its letter, but profound in its significance. It undertakes to demonstrate that woman is of the same nature as man, consequently his equal before God, and not a creature designed to be his slave and treated with disrespect. Being taken out of his side, the image of equality is very much more startling than though she had been formed separately from the same dust. This is to say to man that she is his peer and not his servant, and that he must love and revere her as part of himself.

12. For uncultured minds, without any apprehension of universal laws, incapable of embracing the whole and of conceiving of the infinite, this miraculous and instantaneous creation was essentially calculated to take hold of the imagination. The picture of the universe created out of nothingness, in a few days, by a single act of creative will, was to them the most magnificent portrayal of the power of God. What painting, in fact, could be more sublime and more poetic than these words, illustrative of the divine power, God said, "Let there be light," and there was light? Had they been told that God accomplished the creation of the universe by the gradual and slow working of universal laws, he would have appeared to them far less glorious and powerful. It was necessary to them that these things should appear marvellous, instead of being brought about in ordinary ways: otherwise they would have said that God was no more skilful than men. A scientific and rational theory would have been received by them with coldness and indifference.

Primitive men are like children, and it is needful for them to have given to them intellectual food adapted to their understanding. To-day, as we are enlightened by the brilliance of science, we turn from the material errors put forth by Moses; but we must not blame him for having spoken in the language of his time, for in any other speech he would have been neither comprehended nor accepted.

13. Let us respect these pictures which now appear to us so puerile, as we respect the fables which enlighten our childish minds as they are first developing the powers of thought. Through these pictures Moses inculcated in the minds of primitive men the idea of God and of his majesty, an artless faith which it is the province of the torch of science to purify. Because we have learned to read fluently, do not let us despise the book from which we have learned to spell. Let us not therefore reject the biblical Genesis: on the contrary, let us study it as an instructive history of the infancy of peoples. It is an epic rich in allegories, in which we may find hidden wisdom; it must be commented upon with the aid of such light as reason and science can supply.

Let us prize all its poetic beauties, and the spiritual instructions veiled under its allegoric forms. It must be shown boldly wherein its errors lie in the interest of religion itself. We can respect it far more when its errors are no longer imposed upon our belief as truths; and God will but appear grander and more powerful when his name shall be no longer attached to misleading documents.

14. *Paradise Lost.* — GENESIS, CHAP. II. — 8.

And the Lord God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed.

9. And out of the ground made the Lord God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil.

10. And a river went out of Eden to water the garden; and from thence it was parted, and became into four heads.

11. The name of the first is *Pison*: that is it which compasseth the whole land of *Havilah*, where there is gold;

12. And the gold of that land is good: there is bdellium and the onyx stone.

13. And the name of the second river is *Gihon*: the same is it that compasseth the whole land of *Ethiopia*.

14. And the name of the third river is *Hiddekel*: that is it which goeth toward the east of *Assyria*. And the fourth river is *Euphrates*.

15. And the Lord God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it.

16. And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat:

17. But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.

18. And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.

19. And out of the ground the Lord God formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air; and brought them unto Adam to see what he would call them: and whatsoever Adam called every living creature, that was the name thereof.

20. And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field; but for Adam there was not found an help meet for him.

21. And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof;

22. And the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man.

23. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man.

24. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

25. And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed.

CHAP. III. — 1. Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?

2. And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden:

3. But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.

4. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die.

5. For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.

6. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.

7. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons.

8. And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden.

9. And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou?

10. And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself.

11. And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?

12. And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat.

13. And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat.

14. And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life:



15. And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.

16. Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow in thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.

17. And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life;

18. Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field;

19. In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.

20. And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living.

21. Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them.

22. And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever:

23. Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken.

24. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a

flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.

15. Under a puerile and sometimes ridiculous image, if one regards its form only, allegory often conceals the greatest truths. Is this a more absurd fable than that of Saturn, who is represented as a god devouring stones whom he takes for his children? But at the same time what can be more profoundly philosophically true than this figure if we seek its moral? Saturn is the personification of time. All things being the work of time, he is the father of all that exists. Moreover, all is destroyed by time. Saturn devouring stones is the emblem of destruction by time of even the most enduring forms, which are his children since they are formed by time. And what escapes this destruction according to this same allegory? Jupiter, the emblem of superior intelligence, of the indestructible spiritual principle. This image is so natural, that in modern language, without allusion to the ancient fable, it is said of a thing defaced by time, that it has been devoured, corroded, or ravaged by it.

16. All pagan mythology is in reality only a vast allegorical picture of the good and bad sides of humanity. He who seeks the spirit of it ever finds it a complete course in the highest philosophy, which is also true of our modern fables. The absurdity is to mistake the form for the moral of it; but the pagan priests taught only the form. Perhaps some of them were only acquainted with that, while others interested themselves to maintain such beliefs among the people as favored their power. Sometimes the forms

were more productive of good to the people than philosophy could have been. The veneration of the people for the form was an inexhaustible source of riches by the gifts accumulated in the temples, the sacrifices and offerings made intentionally to the gods, but really to the profit of their representatives. A less credulous people would have been less given to emblems, statues, and allegories. Thus Socrates was condemned to drink hemlock, because of his endeavors to substitute truth for error. Then it was not the custom to burn heretics alive. Five centuries later, the Christ was condemned to an infamous death for having, like Socrates, wished to substitute the spirit for the letter, and because his wholly spiritual doctrine would overthrow the supremacy of the priests, pharisees, and doctors of law.

17. It is so with Genesis, where it is necessary to see great moral truths under material figures, which, taken literally, are as absurd as any of our fables taken literally; the scenes and dialogues attributed to animals, for instance. Adam personifies humanity. His individual fault is but a figure of the general feebleness of mankind, in whom the material instincts predominate, which man knows not how to resist. The tree of life is the emblem of spirit. As the tree of knowledge represents the conscious knowledge of good and evil, which man acquires by the growth of intelligence and use of free will, by virtue of which he chooses between the two, it marks the point at which the soul, ceasing to be guided by instinct alone, takes possession of liberty, and incurs responsibility for action. The fruit of

the tree emblemizes the object of the material desires of man. It is an allegory of temptation, and employs under the same figure the influences which lure toward evil. By eating, is meant his succumbing to the temptation.<sup>1</sup>

It grows in the midst of a delightful garden, in order to show that seduction accompanies pleasure, and to recall to mind at the same time, that, if man allows material joys to preponderate, he attaches himself to earth, removing himself far off from his spiritual destiny. The death with which he is menaced if he infringes the divine law is the warning of the inevitable physical and moral consequences which the violation of divine law entails upon him, — the violation of those laws which God has engraven upon his conscience.

It is very evident that corporeal death is not signified, since, after his fall, Adam lived on earth many years; but spiritual death is unquestionably referred to, otherwise the loss of innocence. But even this results in moral advancement. The image employed is the loss he experiences by his expulsion from this delightful garden. The serpent to-day passes for something quite other than deceit. It is in con-

<sup>1</sup> In no text is the fruit specially mentioned as an apple. This word apple is only found in infantile versions of it. The Hebrew word is *peri*, which means the same as in French ("fruit"), but without specification of species, and can be taken in the material, moral, or figurative sense. With the Israelites there is no obligatory interpretation. When a word has many acceptations, each one understands it in his own way, provided the interpretation is not contrary to the rules of grammar. The word *peri* has been translated into the Latin *malum*, which signifies "apples" and all other fruits. It is derived from the Greek *mélon*, participle of verb *mé'o*, "to interest," "to take care," "to attract."

nection with its form, rather than with its character, that it is associated with wicked suggestions which glide into the mind with the noiseless subtlety of the serpent, and by which we are so often easily led into temptation. Besides, if the serpent on account of having deceived the woman, has been doomed to crawl upon the earth, it must formerly have had limbs when it could not have been a serpent. Why then impose upon the artless faith of childhood as truths allegories which are so evidently such, and which, in misleading judgment, cause children to regard the Bible later in life as a tissue of absurd fables?

18. If the fault of Adam is literally that of having eaten fruit, the almost puerile nature of the sin cannot be justly condemned with the severity it has received. We cannot rationally admit what is generally considered to be the fact; otherwise God, considering this fault irredeemable, must have condemned his own work, since he had created man for the propagation of man. If Adam had understood in this sense that he was forbidden to touch the fruit of the tree, and if he had scrupulously obeyed the command, where would humanity be? and would not the designs of the Creator be frustrated? If it were thus, God would have created the entire universe for two individuals; and humanity as a race would have appeared against his will. God had not created Adam and Eve to remain alone upon the earth. The proof of it is found in the words addressed to them immediately on their formation, when they were unfallen in the terrestrial paradise. God blesses them, and says to them, "Increase and

replenish the earth, subduing it" (chap. i., ver. 28). Since the multiplication of man was a law of the terrestrial paradise, his expulsion cannot be due to the supposed cause.

That which has given credit to this supposition is the feeling of shame with which Adam and Eve were seized at the sight of God, and which caused them to cover themselves. But this shame is a figure of comparison: it symbolizes the confusion that all culprits experience in the presence of him whom they have offended.

19. What then is the definition of this fault which has been able to strike forever with reprobation the descendants of him who committed it? Cain, the fratricide, was not treated so severely. No theologian has been able logically to define it, because all have followed the same circle of faulty ideas about it, departing not from the letter of the tale. To-day we know that this fault is not an isolated action, personal to an individual, but that it comprehends under one unique allegorical fact all the departures from the right which can render culpable all humanity, yet imperfect on the earth, who make an infraction of the law of God. That is why the fault of the first man, symbolizing humanity, is symbolized by an act of disobedience.

20. By saying to Adam that he will draw his nourishment from the earth by the sweat of his brow, God symbolized the obligation of work; but why does he make work a punishment? What would the intelligence of man be if it were not developed by labor? What would the earth be if it were not made fruitful, transformed, and rendered healthy by the in-

telligent work of man? It is written in chap. ii., vers. 5 and 7, "The Lord God had not as yet caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was no man to labor upon it: so God formed man from the dust of the earth." This quotation, taken in connection with another, which is "Replenish the earth," proves that man was from the beginning destined to occupy all the earth, and to cultivate it; moreover, that paradise was not a circumscribed place upon one corner of the globe. If the culture of the earth was in consequence of Adam's fall, if Adam had not sinned, the earth would not have been cultivated, and the views of God would not have been accomplished. Why did he say to the woman, that, because she had committed this sin, she should bear children in sorrow? How can the pain of child-bearing be a chastisement, since it is a consequence of the organism, and has been physiologically proved to be necessary? How can any thing which is according to the laws of nature be a punishment? This is what theologians have not yet explained, and that which they will not be able to do while they look at things from their present point of view. However, these Bible quotations, which seem so contradictory, can be justified.

21. Let us remark at first, that, if at the moment of the creation of Adam and Eve their soul had just been taken from nothing, as is taught us, they must have been novices in all things: they could have known nothing of death. Since they were alone upon the earth, whilst they lived in their terrestrial paradise, they had never seen any one die. How, then, could they have comprehended the menace

of death which God made to them? How could Eve comprehend that the pain of child-bearing would be a punishment when she had never borne children, and was, besides, the only woman in the world? The words of God could have had for Adam and Eve no meaning. Just taken from nothing, they could neither have known why they were created, or whence they came. They could neither comprehend the Creator or his object in forbidding them to eat the fruit. With no experience of the conditions of life, they must have sinned like children who act without discernment, which renders more incomprehensible still the terrible responsibility which God has imposed upon them and entire humanity.

22. To that which theology fails to explain, Spiritism gives without difficulty a clear explanation in a rational manner by the anteriority of soul, and the plurality of existences, without which all is mystery and anomaly in the life of men.

The admission that Adam and Eve had lived before, makes all things plain. God does not speak to them as children, but as to beings in a condition to comprehend, and who do comprehend him,—an evident proof that this knowledge has been acquired in an anterior life. Let us admit also that they have lived in a more advanced world, which was less material than ours, where the work of the spirit took the place of manual labor; that by their rebellion against the law of God, figured by disobedience, they have been exiled as a punishment to this earth, where man, in consequence of the nature of the globe, is compelled to labor. God was right in saying to them, “In the world where you will hence-



forth live, you will cultivate the earth, and gain your nourishment by the sweat of your brow;” and to the female, “You will bear children in sorrow because such is the condition of this world” (chap. XI., Nos. 31 and following ones). The terrestrial paradise for which they have so vainly sought the traces was then a description of the happy world, where Adam had once lived, or rather the race of spirits of whom he is the personification. The expulsion from paradise marks the moment when these spirits have come to incarnate themselves among the inhabitants of this world, and the change of situation which has succeeded to it. The angel armed with a flaming sword, who defends the gate of paradise, symbolizes the impossibility for spirits of lower worlds to penetrate into superior ones, before having merited them by purification. (See chap. XIV., Nos. 9, etc.)

23. Cain, after the murder of Abel, said to the Lord, “My punishment is greater than I can bear. Behold, thou hast driven me out this day from the face of the earth; and from thy face shall I be hid; and I shall be a fugitive and a vagabond on the earth; and it shall come to pass, that every one that findeth me shall slay me. And the Lord said unto him, Therefore whosoever slayeth Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold. And the Lord set a mark upon Cain, lest any one finding him should kill him. And Cain went out from the presence of the Lord, and dwelt in the land of Nod, on the east of Eden.”

24. If one clings to the literal meaning of Genesis, behold to what consequences one arrives. From

it we learn that Adam and Eve were alone in the world after their expulsion from the terrestrial paradise. It is subsequent to that that Cain and Abel were born. Now, Cain having killed his brother, and having been exiled to another country, saw his father and mother no more; and they were again alone. It is only a long time after, at the age of a hundred and thirty years, that Adam had a third son called Seth. After the birth of Seth, he still lived, according to biblical genealogy, eight hundred years, and begat sons and daughters. When Cain established himself eastward of Eden, according to Genesis, there were only three persons upon the earth, — Adam, Eve, and Cain. However, he had a wife and child. Who could this woman have been? and where could he have found her? He built a city; but many inhabitants are necessary to make a city: for it is not possible or presumable that he made it for himself, wife, and son, or that he was able to construct it by himself alone. It is necessary to infer, from this recital, that the country was peopled. Now this could not have been by the descendants of Adam, who then had no other children than Cain. The presence of other inhabitants is also proved by this saying of Cain, “I shall be a fugitive and vagabond, and whoever will find me will kill me,” and from the reply God made to it. By whom could he have been killed? and for what good could the sign which God placed on his forehead have been needed if he was not to encounter any one? If, then, there were upon the earth other men outside of the family of Adam, they must have been there before him: whence this sequence, drawn from even the text of Genesis, that Adam is

neither the first nor the only father of human beings (chap. XI., No. 36).

25. There has come a necessity for the knowledge that Spiritism has brought touching the connections between the spiritual and material principles and the nature of the soul; its creation in a state of simplicity and ignorance; its union with the body; its progressive, indefinite march through successive existences, and through worlds which are so many rounds of the ladder on the way to perfection; its gradual release from the influence of matter by the use of its free will; the cause of its leanings toward good or evil and of its aptitudes; the phenomena of birth and death; the state of the spirit in embodiment, and at length its future reward for efforts made in the amelioration of its condition as incentive to its perseverance in well-doing, which throw light upon every part of the spiritual Genesis.

Thanks to this light, man knows henceforth whence he comes, whither he goes, why he is upon earth, and why he suffers. He knows that his future is in his own hands, and that the duration of his captivity here below depends upon himself. Genesis, which previously appeared as a mean and shallow allegory, now appears grand and majestic, worthy of the goodness and justice of the Creator. Considered from this point of view, Genesis will both confound and vanquish incredulity.

## CHAPTER XIII.

### THE MIRACLES ACCORDING TO SPIRITISM.

1. *Nature of Miracles.*—In its etymological acceptation, the word “miracle,” from *mirari* (Latin), *admirer* (French), signifies “to wonder,” an extraordinary or surprising thing. The French Academy defines this word, “an act of divine power contrary to the known laws of nature.” In its usual acceptation, this word has lost, like so many others, its primitive signification. In general it was, and still is, limited to a particular order of facts. The general idea of the masses is that a miracle is supernatural. In the liturgical sense it is a derogation of the laws of nature by which God manifests his power. Such is, indeed, its common acceptation, which is considered its proper sense. It is only by comparison and metaphor that it is applied to ordinary circumstances of life. One of the characteristics of a miracle, properly speaking, is that of inexplicability, which implies its accomplishment by supernatural laws; and such is the idea that is attached to it, that, if it is possible to explain a miraculous fact, it is no more a miracle, people say, no matter how surprising it may be.

Another characteristic of a miracle is its unique or exceptional nature. From the moment when a

phenomenon is reproduced, be it spontaneously or by an act of will, it is implied that it is subject to a law; and thenceforth, be this law known or unknown, the event cannot be miraculous.

2. Science produces miracles every day before the eyes of the ignorant. If a really dead man be recalled to life by divine intervention, this would be a veritable miracle, because it is a fact contrary to the laws of nature; but if the man had only the appearance of death, if he has still in him the remains of latent vitality, and science or magnetic action succeeds in re-animating him, to enlightened people a natural phenomenon is presented, but to the eyes of the ignorant the fact will appear miraculous.

When, in certain countries, a physicist flies an electric kite, and makes lightning strike a tree, this new Prometheus will certainly be credited with diabolical power. But Joshua arresting the movement of the sun, or rather of the earth, by admitting this fact, we must admit a veritable miracle; for there exists no magnetizer endowed with power to accomplish so prodigious a feat. Centuries of ignorance have been fruitful in miracles, because all that was not understood passed for miracle. Measurably as science has discovered new laws, the circle of the marvellous has been narrowed; but, as it has not explored the whole of nature's field, there remains still quite a large place for the miraculous.

3. The marvellous, expelled from the material domain by science, has been intrenched in that of Spiritism, which has been its last refuge. Spiritism, by demonstrating that the spiritual element is one

of the living forces of nature, a force continually acting concurrently with material forces, takes in the phenomena which arise in the circle of natural effects, because that, like all others, they are subject to law. If the marvellous is to be expelled from the realm of spirit, it has then no more existence; then alone can we say that the age of miracles has passed.<sup>1</sup>

4. Spiritism comes, then, in its turn to do that which each science has done at its advent, to reveal new laws, and explain, consequently, the phenomena which are the result of these laws. These phenomena, it is true, are connected with the existence of spirits, and with their intervention in the material world which has been called supernatural. But to make it really so it would be necessary to prove that spirits and their manifestations are contrary to the laws of nature, that no one of these laws produces their manifestation. The spirit is none other than the human life or soul which survives the body. It is the real indestructible being which cannot die, while the body is only a destructible accessory. Its existence is, therefore, as natural after as during embodiment. It is submitted to the laws governing the spiritual principle, as the body submits to those which rule the material universe; but as these two principles have a necessary affinity, as they incessantly re-act

<sup>1</sup> The word "element" is not used here to signify simple elementary bodies of primitive molecules, but simply a constituent portion of a whole. In this sense it can be said that the spiritual element plays an active part in the economy of the universe, as it is said that the civil and military *elements* figure in population; that the religious *element* enters into education; that in Algeria it is necessary to take into account the Arabian *element*.

upon one another, as from their simultaneous action result the harmony and movement of the whole, it follows that the spiritual and material elements are parts of the same whole, one as natural as the other, and that the first is not an exception, an anomaly in the order of things.

5. During embodiment the spirit acts upon matter through the intermediation of its fluidic body, or *peri spirit*: it is the same when disembodied. It accomplishes as spirit, and by the measure of its capacities, that which it did when on earth; only as it has no longer, for an instrument, its mortal body, it serves itself when necessary with the material organs of an embodied being who is a medium. It does as he does, who, unable to write himself, employs an amanuensis, or who, not understanding a language, is served by an interpreter. An amanuensis and an interpreter are mediums for an incarnated being, as a spirit medium is the interpreter or amanuensis of a spirit.

6. The element in which spirits act, and the means of execution being different from those employed during embodiment, the effects are different. These effects only appear supernatural because they are produced through agents who are not those by means of which men serve themselves; but from the instant when it is known that these agents are natural, and that the manifestations occur in obedience to laws, there is nothing supernatural or marvellous about them. Before the properties of electricity were known, the electrical phenomenon was regarded as miraculous by certain people. As soon as the cause was known, the miracle vanished. It is the same

with spiritual phenomena, which arise no more from the setting aside of nature's laws than do the electrical, acoustic, luminous, and other phenomena which have given rise to a crowd of superstitions.

7. However, will it not be said, you admit that a spirit can raise a table and maintain it in space without support? Is not that a derogation of the law of gravity? Yes, to the *known* law; but are all laws known? Before men had experimented with the ascensional force of certain gas, who had imagined that a heavy machine, carrying several men, could soar by force of attraction? To the vulgar eye the ascent of a balloon must have appeared miraculous or diabolical. He who had proposed a hundred years ago to transmit a despatch five hundred leagues, and receive an answer within a few minutes, would have passed for a fool. If he had performed the feat, it would have been commonly believed that he had the Devil under his control; for then no one but the Devil was thought capable of travelling so quickly. However, now the occurrence is not only regarded as possible, but is accepted as altogether natural. Why, then, should an unknown fluid not possess the property, under given circumstances, of counterbalancing the effect of weight, as hydrogen counterbalances the weight of the balloon? an occurrence, indeed, that is similar to that which takes place in the case under our notice. (See "Mediums' Book," chap. 4.)

8. The spritual phenomena, being natural, have been produced in all ages; but because their study could not be effected by material means, with which physical science arms itself, they have remained



longest in the supernatural domain whence Spiritism rescues them. The supernatural hypothesis based upon inexplicable appearances leaves the imagination wholly free, which, wandering into the unknown, gives birth to superstitious beliefs. A rational explanation founded upon natural law, leading man to a foundation in reality, gives a place of rest to imaginative flights, and destroys superstition. Far from extending the supernatural domain, Spiritism reduces it to the narrowest limits, and robs it of its last refuge.

If it makes possible belief in certain facts, it prevents belief in much else, because it demonstrates in the circle of spiritual being, as science in a circle of materiality, that which is possible, and that which is not. Always, however, as it makes no pretension to say the final word upon all subjects, even upon those which belong to its own realm, it does not take the position of an absolute regulator of the possible, and reserves always some knowledge for future disclosures.

9. The spiritual phenomena consist in different modes of manifestation of soul or spirit during embodiment, or in their disembodied state. It is by its manifestations that the soul reveals its existence, its survival, and its individuality; it is judged by its effects. The cause being natural, the effect is equally so. These effects are made the special object of research in the study of Spiritism, in order to arrive at knowledge as completely as possible of nature and of the attributes of the soul, as well as of the laws which govern the spiritual principle.

10. For those who deny the independent existence

of the spirit, and consequently that of the independent individuality of the surviving soul, all nature is simple tangible matter. All phenomena attaching to Spiritism are to them supernatural, and consequently chimerical. Failing to admit the cause, they cannot admit the effect; and, when the effects are patent, they are attributed by them to imagination, illusion, hallucination: they refuse to give credence to them. Their own preconceived opinions render them incapable of judging Spiritism fairly, because they deny all things which are immaterial.

11. Since Spiritism admits effects consequent upon the existence of the soul, it does not follow that it accepts all the qualified effects of the marvellous, or that it justifies and accredits them. To let it be the champion of all dreamers, of every Utopian idea, of all systematic eccentricities, of all miraculous legends, one must have a very slight knowledge of it and its purposes. Its adversaries imagine that they can oppose it with arguments admitting no reply, when, after making learned researches with the *convulsionnaires* of St. Médard, the *Camisards* of Cevennes, or the recluses of London, they have discovered patent cases of imposition that no one contests. But are these histories the gospel of Spiritism? Have its partisans denied that charlatanism has employed certain truths for its own profit, that the imagination may have created, that fanaticism may have exaggerated much? Extravagances are not committed solely in its name. Is not true science abused by ignorance, and true religion by excess of fanaticism? Many critics regard Spiritism as a fairy tale and popular legend, which are

fictions worth no more than historical and tragical romances.

12. The spiritual phenomena are oftenest spontaneous, and are produced without any preparation through persons who bestow the least thought upon them; at other times they are provoked by agents known as mediums. In the first case the medium is unconscious of his mediumistic powers; in the second he acts by a knowledge of cause: hence the distinction between conscious and unconscious mediums. The latter are the more numerous, and are frequently found among obstinate and sceptical persons, who are made good witnesses in defence of Spiritism without their own knowledge or desire. The spontaneous phenomena constitute an important capital for Spiritism; for one cannot suspect the good faith of the parties through whom they are obtained, like somnambulism, which with some individuals is purely natural and involuntary, and with others induced by magnetic action.<sup>1</sup>

But let these phenomena be, or not be, the result of mental volition, the first cause is exactly the same in either instance, and detracts nothing from natural laws. Mediums, then, produce nothing absolutely supernatural: consequently they perform no miracle. The instantaneous cures often effected are no more miraculous than other effects; for they are due to the action of a fluidic agent performing the office of therapeutic agent, whose properties are no less natural because unknown till to-day. The title thaumaturgist, given to certain mediums by ignorant critics

<sup>1</sup> Mediums' Book, chap. 5. *Revue Spirite*: examples, December, 1865, p. 370; August, 1865, p. 231.

of the principles of Spiritism, is then altogether improper. The qualification of *miraculous* given to these kinds of phenomena can only give an erroneous idea of their true character.

13. The intervention of occult intelligences in spirit phenomena renders the latter no more miraculous than other phenomena which are due to invisible agents, because that the occult beings peopling space are one of the powers of nature, — a power whose action upon the material world is incessant as well as upon the moral. Spiritism, in enlightening us with regard to this power, gives us the key to a crowd of mysterious things unexplained by any other means, and which in former times must have passed for amazing prodigies of knowledge. It reveals, as does magnetism, a law hitherto unknown, or at least poorly understood; or it is more correct to say that the effects were known: for they have been produced through all time before the law was discovered, and it is only the ignorance of law which engendered superstition.

This law being now known, the marvellous disappears, and the phenomena enter into the order of natural events. Thus, by moving a table or writing prescriptions under spirit guidance, spiritists perform no miracles any more than does the physician who restores a man almost dead to life, or than the scientist does by bringing lightning from the clouds. He who would pretend, with the aid of this science, to perform miracles would be either an ignoramus or an impostor.

14. Since Spiritism repudiates all pretension to the miraculous, outside of it only are there miracles

in the usual acceptance of the word! Let us first declare, that of so-called miracles having taken place before the advent of Spiritism, and which still take place in our day, the greater part, if not all, find their explanation in the new knowledge of law just revealed. These facts enter, then, although under a new name, into the order of spirit phenomena, and as such are not supernatural.

It is well understood that it acts only with authentic facts, and not with those which, under the name of miracles, are the product of an unworthy jugglery in view of taking advantage of credulity, any more than it acts with certain legendary facts which can have had in the beginning a depth of truth, but which superstition has enlarged to absurdity. Upon these facts Spiritism comes to throw light by affording means to separate truth from error.

15. As to miracles, properly speaking, nothing being impossible with God, he can perform them without doubt. Has he done it? Does he ever act contrary to the laws which he has established? It does not belong to man to prejudge the acts of divinity, and to subordinate them to the feebleness of his understanding. However, we have for criterion of our judgment, in regard to divine things, the attributes even of God. To sovereign power he joins sovereign wisdom, whence it is necessary to conclude that he does nothing uselessly. Why then should he perform miracles? In order to attest his power, it is said. But the power of God, is it not manifested in a much more striking manner by the magnificent whole of the works of creation, by the foreseeing wisdom which presides in the smallest as

well as in the largest of his works, and by the harmony of the laws which rule the universe, than by a few little and puerile modifications which all tricksters know how to imitate? What would we think of a learned mechanic who, in order to prove his skill, should disarrange the clock which he had constructed, a masterpiece of scientific skill, in order to prove that he can deface that which he has made. On the contrary, is his knowledge not displayed by the regularity and precision of its movements? The question of miracles, then, is not, properly speaking, in the province of Spiritism; but, sustaining itself by the reasoning that God makes nothing uselessly, this idea can be educed, that, miracles not being necessary to the glorification of God, nothing in the universe is diverted from the general laws. If there are some facts which we do not understand, it is because we have not the necessary knowledge to comprehend them.

16. The admission that God may be able, for reasons which we cannot appreciate, to derogate from the laws which he has established, would make these laws no more immutable; but at least it is rational to think that God alone possesses this power. One could not admit, without denying totally that he is omnipotent, that it is allowed to the Spirit of Evil to eclipse the work of God by performing mighty works which may deceive even the very elect. This would imply the possession of a power equal to his own. That is a doctrine, however, which is or has been taught. If Satan has the power to interrupt the course of natural laws, whose work is the divine one? If Satan does it without the divine permis-

sion, he is more powerful than God. Moreover, God is not omnipotent if he delegates to him this power, as they pretend he does, in order to induce men more easily to commit wrong ; and this theory denies sovereign goodness. In both cases it is a denial of one of the attributes of the Creator, without which he could not be God. As to the Church, how does it distinguish the good miracles which come from God from the evil ones which emanate from Satan? how can one draw the line between them? Let a miracle be official or not, it is not at least a derogation of the laws which emanate from God alone. If an individual is cured, as is said, miraculously, let it be by God or Satan, he is no less cured. It is necessary to have a very poor idea of human intelligence in order to expect that such doctrines can be accepted in our day. The possibility of certain reputed miraculous facts being recognized, it is just to conclude, that, notwithstanding they are from the source which is attributed to them, they are natural effects which spirits or incarnated beings can employ, like all things, as their own intelligence or scientific knowledge allows them, for good or evil, according to their goodness or perversity. A perverted being can then do things which pass for prodigies to the eyes of the ignorant, by putting to profit his knowledge ; but, when effects are good, it would be illogical to attribute to them a diabolical origin.

17. But it has been thought that religion leans upon facts which never have and never can be explained. Perhaps they never have been ; but that they never can be, is another question.

Does any one know what knowledge and discoveries may be ours in the future, without alluding to the miracle of creation, the grandest of all beyond dispute, and which is now acknowledged to be within the domain of universal law? Can we not see already, under the empire of Spiritism, magnetism, somnambulism, the reproduction of ecstasies, visions, apparitions, clairvoyance, instantaneous cures, trances, oral and other communications, with beings of the invisible world, phenomena known from time immemorial, considered formerly as miraculous, now being demonstrated as belonging to the natural order of things in harmony with the universal laws of being? Sacred books are full of accounts of these things, but qualified by supernaturalism; but, as analogous facts are found in all religious works of antiquity, some of which are more marvellous than any biblical accounts, if the truth of a religion depended upon the number and nature of these facts, Christianity could at once be swept away by Paganism.

18. To pretend that the supernatural is the necessary foundation of all religion, that it is the key to the whole arch of the Christian edifice, is to sustain a dangerous thesis. If one makes the truth of Christianity rest solely upon the base of miracle, he gives it but a fragile support, from which stones are detached every day.

This belief, of which some eminent theologians are defenders, conducts rightly to the conclusion that, in a given time, no religion will be possible, not even the Christian religion, if that which is regarded as supernatural be demonstrated as natural; for so many arguments will be heaped against



it that no one will be able to maintain the miraculous character of any fact after its naturalness has been proved. Now, the proof that a fact is no exception to natural laws is, that it can be explained by these laws, and that, being able to be reproduced by the intermediation of any individual whatever, it ceases to be the exclusive property of saints. It is not the supernatural which is essential to religion, but the spiritual principle which has been so mischievously confounded with the marvellous, and without which religion is impossible.

Spiritism considers the Christian religion at a more elevated point: it gives to it a more solid base than miracles, even the immutable laws of God, which rule the spiritual equally with the material principle. This base bids defiance to time and science alike; for time and science will at length sanction it. God is no less worthy of our admiration, gratitude, or respect, because he does not derogate his laws, grand beyond all else in their immutability. He needs not the supernatural as an element in his worship. Nature is sufficiently imposing of itself, without any additions, to prove the existence of the Supreme Power. Religion will always find so many incredulous ones, that reason must sanction it ere they accept it. Christianity can lose nothing by this sanction: it, on the contrary, gains by it. If any thing has destroyed it, in the opinion of certain people, it is the abuse of the marvellous or supernatural.

19. If we take the word "miracle" in its correct etymological sense, — in the sense simply of a wonder, — we behold incessant miracles before our very

eyes. We breathe them in the air; they crowd upon our steps: for all nature is a wonder. Can one give to the people, to the ignorant, to the weak-minded, an idea of God's power, without showing them infinite wisdom presiding in all things? — in the admirable organisms of all that live, in the fructification of plants, in the appropriation of every part of every being to its needs, according to the place of its abode. It is necessary to make them behold the divine action in producing a blade of grass, in the expanding flower. We must show them his goodness in the sun which vivifies all things, his goodness in his solicitude for all creatures however small or feeble they may be, his foresight in giving life to each creature never given uselessly, his wisdom in the good which proceeds from momentary and apparent evil. Make them comprehend that evil is really man's own work, and that God has made every thing good. Seek them, not to frighten them with pictures of endless flame, causing them to doubt the goodness of God; encourage them with the certainty of their ability to repair all the wrong they have done; show them the discoveries of science as revelations of divine law, and not as the work of Satan; finally, teach them to read the book of nature, incessantly open before them as an inexhaustible volume, wherein the wisdom and goodness of the Creator are inscribed on every page. Then they will comprehend that a Being so great, occupying himself with all, watching over all, foreseeing all, must be sovereignly powerful. The laborer will behold him while ploughing a furrow, and the unfortunate will bless him in affliction, for he will know that unhappiness

is his own fault. Then will man be truly religious, rationally so, which is far better than to encourage faith in stories of images which sweat blood, in statues which wink their eyes and move their limbs (common European superstitions).

## CHAPTER XIV.

FLUIDS.—NATURE AND PROPERTIES OF FLUIDS.—EXPLANATION OF SOME THINGS BY REPUTE SUPERNATURAL.

1. *Nature and Properties of Fluids.*—Science has furnished the key to those miracles which proceed particularly from the material element, either by explaining them, or in demonstrating the impossibility of them by the laws which rule matter. But the phenomena where the spiritual element is the preponderating force, not being explainable solely by the laws of matter, escape the investigations of scientists. That is why they have more than other facts the apparent character of marvels. It is then only in the laws which rule spiritual life one can find the key for the miracles of this category.

2. The universal cosmic fluid is, as has been demonstrated, elementary primitive matter, of which the modifications and transformations constitute the innumerable varieties of the bodies of nature.

So far as the elementary, universal principle is concerned, it offers two distinct states; that of etherialization, or imponderability, that one can consider as the primitive, normal state, and that of materialization, or ponderability, which is in some sort only consecutive. The intermediary point is that of the

transformation of the fluid into tangible matter; but there still is no sudden transition, for one can consider our imponderable fluids as a boundary between the two states (chap. IV., Nos. 10 and following ones). Each one of these two states gives place necessarily to special phenomena. To the second belong those of the visible world, and to the first those of the invisible one. Those called material phenomena are, properly speaking, in the domain of science. The solution of the others, designated spiritual or psychic phenomena, because they are allied more especially to the existence of spirits, is among the prerogatives of Spiritism. But, as spiritual and material life are in incessant contact, the phenomena of these two orders are presented often simultaneously. Man, in a state of incarnation, can have only the perception of the psychical phenomena which are connected with the material life. Those which belong to the exclusive domain of spiritual life escape the eye of the material senses, and can be perceived only in the spiritual state.<sup>1</sup>

3. In an etherealized state the cosmic fluid is not uniform. Without ceasing to be ethereal, it is submitted to modifications as varied in their kind and more numerous than in a state of tangible matter. These modifications constitute distinct fluids, which, although proceeding from the same principle, are

<sup>1</sup> The name *psychical* phenomena expresses the idea better than spiritual does, as these phenomena rest upon the properties and attributes of the soul, or rather on the peri-spiritual fluids, which are inseparable from the soul. This qualification attaches them more intimately to the order of natural facts, regulated by laws. One can then admit them as psychical effects without allowing them the title of miracles.

endowed with special properties, and give place to particular phenomena of the invisible world. All being relative, these fluids have for the spirits, who are themselves fluidical, an appearance as material as that of tangible objects for the incarnated, and are for them that which the substances of the terrestrial world are for us. They elaborate and combine them, in order to produce determined effects, as men do with their materials, yet by different processes. But there, as here, it is only given to the most enlightened spirits to comprehend the *rôle* of the constitutive elements of their world. The ignorant people of the invisible world are as incapable of explaining the phenomena of which they are witnesses, and in which they co-operate often mechanically, as the ignorant of earth are of explaining the effects of light or of electricity, or of explaining the processes of seeing and hearing.

4. The fluidical elements of the spiritual world elude our instruments of analysis, and the perception of our senses. They are things suited to tangible, and not to ethereal, matter. Spiritual substances belong to a midst so different from ours that we can judge of them only by comparisons as imperfect as those by which a man born blind seeks to form an idea of the theory of color.

But among these fluids a few are intimately joined to corporeal life, and belong in a measure to the terrestrial universe. In default of direct perception of cause, one can observe the effects of them, and acquire some knowledge of their nature with precision. This study is essential; for it is the key limited to a multitude of phenomena, which are inexplicable by the laws of matter alone.

5. The starting-point of the universal fluid is the degree of absolute ethereality, of which nothing can give us an idea. Its opposite point is its transformation into material substance.

Between these two extremes there exist innumerable transformations, which are allied more or less to one another. The fluids which are the nearest materiality — consequently the least pure — are composed of that which might be called the spiritual terrestrial atmosphere. In this midst are found the widely different degrees of ethereality whence the incarnated and disembodied inhabitants of the earth draw the necessary elements for the economy of their existence. These fluids, however subtle and impalpable they may be to us, are nevertheless of a comparatively gross nature to the ethereal fluids of the superior regions. It is the same on the surface of all worlds, saving the differences of constitution and vitality proper to each. The less material life there is there, the less the spiritual fluids have of affinity with matter. The name “spiritual fluid” is not rigidly accurate, as it is really always matter more or less refined. There is nothing really spiritual, but the soul or intelligent principle. We designate fluids thus by comparison, and chiefly by reason of their affinity with spirits. They constitute the substance of the spiritual world. That is why they are called spiritual fluids.

6. Who understands the intricate constitution of tangible matter? It is, perhaps, compact only in relation to our senses; and that which seems to prove this is the facility with which it is traversed by spiritual fluids, and the spirits to whom it is no more of an obstacle than are transparent bodies to light.

Tangible matter, having for a primitive element the ethereal cosmic fluid, must be able, by becoming disintegrated, to return to a state of etherealization, as the diamond, the hardest of bodies, can be volatilized into impalpable gas. The solidification of matter is in reality only a transitory state of the universal fluid, which can return to its primitive state when the conditions of cohesion cease to exist. Who knows even if, in a tangible state, matter is not susceptible of acquiring a sort of etherealization which would give to it peculiar properties? Certain phenomena which appear authentic tend towards such a supposition as this. We do not yet possess all the beacon-lights of the invisible world; and the future has in reserve for us, without doubt, the knowledge of new laws, which will allow us to comprehend that which is still to us a mystery.

7. The peri-spirit, or fluidical body of the spirits, is one of the most important products of the cosmic fluid: it is a condensation of this fluid around a focus of intelligence or soul. It is also seen that the fleshly body has also its origin in this same fluid transformed and condensed into tangible matter. In the peri-spirit the molecular transformation operates differently, for the fluid preserves its imponderability and its ethereal qualities. The peri-spiritual and carnal body have, then, their source in the same primitive element: both are of matter, although under two different states of it.

8. Spirits draw their peri-spirit from the place where they find themselves; that is to say, that this envelope is formed from the ambient fluids. The result is, that the constitutive elements of the peri-spirit



must vary according to worlds. Jupiter, being a very advanced world, in comparison to the earth, where corporeal life has not the materiality of ours, its peri-spiritual envelopes must be of a nature infinitely more ethereal than upon our earth. Now, although we would not be able to exist in that world in our carnal bodies, our spirits would be able to penetrate there with their terrestrial peri-spirit. In quitting the earth the spirit leaves there its fluidical envelope, and is supplied with another appropriate to the world where he must go.

9. The nature of the fluidical envelope is always in accord with the degree of moral advancement of the spirit. Inferior spirits cannot change their inclination, and consequently cannot by desire transport themselves from one world to another. It is they whose fluidical envelope, although ethereal and imponderable as regards tangible matter, is still too heavy, if one can express it thus, in relation to the spiritual world to allow them to leave their place. It is necessary to include in this category those whose peri-spirit is gross enough to be confounded with their carnal body, which for this reason they believe is still alive. These spirits (and their number is great) remain on the surface of the earth like the incarnated ones, believing themselves always to be attending to their occupations. Others, a little more dematerialized, are not sufficiently so to elevate themselves above the terrestrial regions.<sup>1</sup>

Superior spirits, on the contrary, can enter into

<sup>1</sup> Examples of spirits believing themselves still in this world: *Revue Spirite*, Dec., 1859, p. 310; Nov., 1864, p. 339; April, 1865, p. 117.

inferior worlds, and even incarnate themselves there. They draw, from the constitutive elements of the world they enter, the materials for the fluidical and carnal envelopes appropriate to the midst where they find themselves. They, like the great lord who temporarily leaves his gilded garments to assume the peasant's garb, without being other than the titled character he is on account of the change, will not change thereby their high estate. It is thus that spirits of the most elevated order can manifest themselves to the inhabitants of earth, or incarnate themselves for a mission among them. These spirits carry with them, not the envelope, but the remembrance by intuition of the regions whence they came, and which they see in thought. These are people who see among blind people.

10. The bed of spiritual fluids which surrounds the earth can be compared to the inferior beds of the atmosphere, heavier, more compact, less pure than the superior beds. These fluids are not homogeneous: they are a mixture of molecules of diverse qualities, amongst which are necessarily found the elementary molecules which form the base, but more or less changed in different states.

The effects produced by these fluids will be according to the number of pure parts which they enclose. Such is, by comparison, rectified or mixed alcohol in different proportions of water or of other substances. Its specific weight is augmented by this mixture; while, at the same time, its force and inflammability are diminished, although there may be pure alcohol in all. The spirits called to live in this midst draw therefrom peri-spirit; but, according as the spirit be-

comes more or less purified, its peri-spirit is formed from the purest or grossest of this place. The spirit produces there, always by comparison and not by assimilation, the effect of a chemical re-agent which attracts to it the molecules assimilable to its nature. This capital fact results from it: that the inmost constitution of the peri-spirit is not identical with all embodied or disembodied spirits which people the earth or surrounding space. It is not the same with carnal bodies, which, as has been demonstrated, have been formed of the same elements whatever the superiority or inferiority of their spirits may have been.

Also with us the effects produced by bodies are the same: they have the same necessities, while they differ by all that which is inherent in the peri-spirit. Another result is, that the peri-spiritual envelope of the same spirit is modified with the moral progress of the latter at each incarnation, although incarnating himself in the same surroundings; that the superior spirits, incarnating themselves exceptionally by a mission into an inferior world, have a peri-spirit less gross than that of the natives of this world.

11. The place is always in harmony with the nature of the beings who must live there. Fishes are in the water; winged beings are in the air; spiritual beings are in the spiritual or ethereal fluid, even upon the earth. The ethereal fluid is for the needs of the spirit, that which the atmosphere is for the necessities of the body. Now, as fishes cannot live in the air, and terrestrial animals cannot live in an atmosphere too rarefied for their lungs, inferior spirits cannot support the splendor and impression of the most ethereal fluids. They would not die, because

spirit cannot die; but an instinctive force keeps them at a distance, as one keeps away from a fire which is too hot, or from a light which is too strong. This is the reason why they cannot go away from the midst appropriate to their nature. In order to change it, it is necessary first to change their nature, that they be despoiled of the material instincts which retain them in material midsts. As they become purified and morally transformed, they gradually become identified with purer surroundings, which become a necessity to them, like the eyes of him who has remained a long time in darkness are habituated imperceptibly to the light of day and the splendor of the sun.

12. Thus all is united, all harmonized in the universe. All is submitted to the great and harmonious law of unity, from the most compact materiality to the purest spirituality. The earth is like a vase whence escapes a thick smoke, which clears away as it ascends, the rarefied particles of which are lost in infinite space. Divine power shines in all parts of this great whole. Who would desire that, in order better to attest his power, God, discontented with that which he has made, should disturb this harmony? that he should lower himself to the level of a magician by performing acts worthy of a prestidigitator? And in addition to this they dare to give him as a rival in skill Satan himself! Never, in truth, was divine Majesty more undervalued, and men are astonished at the progress of incredulity! You are right in saying "Faith is departing!" But it is faith in all that chokes reason and good sense,—a faith similar to that which formerly induced persons

to exclaim, "The Gods are departing." But faith in serious things, in God, and in immortality, is always alive in the hearts of men; and, if it has been stifled with the puerile histories with which it has been overloaded, it raises itself stronger as soon as it has been extricated, as the restrained plant rises again in the light of the sun of which it has been deprived.

All is wonderful in nature because all is admirable, and testifies of the divine wisdom. These wonders are for all the world, for all those who have eyes to see and ears to hear, and not for the profit of a few. No, there are no miracles in the sense attached to this word, because all is amenable to the eternal laws of creation.

13. The spiritual fluids, which constitute one of the states of the universal cosmic fluid, are then the atmosphere of spiritual beings. It is the element whence they draw the materials with which they operate, — the place where special phenomena take place, perceptible to the sight and hearing of the spirit, but which escapes the carnal senses which are impressed alone by tangible matter. In short, they are the vehicle for thought, as the air is for sound.

14. Spirits act upon spiritual fluids, not by manipulating them as men manipulate gas, but by the aid of thought and will. Thought and will are to the spirit that which the hand is to man. By thought they impress these fluids into such and such directions; they agglomerate them, combine or disperse them; they form harmonious wholes of them, which have a definitive appearance, form, and color; they change the properties of them, as a chemist changes

those of gas or other bodies by combining them by following certain laws. Sometimes these transformations are the result of an intention: often they are the product of an unconscious thought. It is sufficient for the spirit only to think of a thing in order that this thing produce itself. Thus, for example, a spirit presents himself to the view of an incarnated being endowed with spiritual sight with the same appearance he had when living at the epoch of their acquaintance, although he may have had many incarnations since that time. He presents himself with the costume, the exterior signs, infirmities, wounds, amputated members, etc., that he had then. A person who has been beheaded will present himself with no head. We do not desire to convey the impression that he has preserved these appearances: no, certainly not; for as a spirit he is neither lame, maimed, blind, nor headless: but, his thought conveying the impression when he was thus, his peri-spirit takes instantaneously the appearance of it, but it can at the same time leave it instantaneously. If, then, he has been both a negro and a white man, he will present himself according to which of these two incarnations may be evoked whence his thought will report itself.

15. By an analogous effect the thought of the spirit creates fluid objects of those utensils he used in life. A miser will handle gold, a military man will have his arms and uniform, a smoker his pipe, a laborer his plough and oxen, and an aged woman her distaff. These fluid objects are as real to the spirit as they were in the material state for the living man; but, for the same reason that they are created by thought, their

existence is as fugitive as thought.<sup>1</sup> The action of spirits upon spiritual fluids has consequences of a direct and capital importance for incarnated beings. From the instant that these fluids are the vehicle of thought, that thought can modify the properties of them. It is evident that they must be impregnated by the good or bad qualities of the thoughts which put them in vibration, modified by the purity or impurity of the sentiments. Bad thoughts corrupt the spiritual fluids, as deleterious miasmata corrupt the air we breathe. The fluids which surround or that project bad spirits are then vitiated, whilst those which receive the influence of good spirits are as pure as the degree of moral perfection to which they have attained. It would be impossible to enumerate or to classify the good and bad fluids, or to specify their respective qualities, as their diversity is believed to be as great as that of thought.

16. If the ambient fluids are modified by the projection of the thoughts of the spirit, its peri-spiritual envelope, which is a constituent part of his being, which receives directly and in a permanent manner the impression of his thoughts, must in a still greater degree carry the imprint of its good and bad qualities. The fluids which have become vitiated by the effluvia of the bad spirits can be purified by going away from the latter; but their peri-spirit will always be as it is, as long as the spirit will not change itself.

17. Men, being incarnated beings, have in part the attributes of the spiritual life; for they live in this life as well as in a corporal one, always during sleep, and often in a conscious state. The spirit,

<sup>1</sup> *Revue Spirite*, July, 1859, p. 184.    *Book on Mediums*, chap. 8.

incarnating itself, preserves its peri-spirit with the qualities which are proper to it, and which, as is known, is not circumscribed by the body, but envelops and radiates around it like a fluid atmosphere. By its intimate union with the body the peri-spirit plays a preponderating *rôle* with the organism. By its expansion it places the incarnated being more directly *en rapport* with free spirits. The thought of the embodied mind acts upon the spiritual fluids as that of the disembodied spirit's thought acts. It is transmitted from spirit to spirit in the same way, and, according as it is good or bad, it holds a vicious or healthy relation to the surrounding fluids.

18. The peri-spirit of embodied ones, being of a nature identical to that of the spiritual fluids, assimilates itself with them readily, as a sponge imbibes water. These fluids have over the peri-spirit an action which is the more direct because of its expansion and radiation: it confounds itself with them. These fluids acting upon the peri-spirit, the latter, in its turn, re-acts upon the material organism with which it is in molecular contact. If the effluvia are of a good nature, the bodies receive a salutary impression; if bad, a painful one. If the bad are permanent and energetic, they can cause physical disorders: certain maladies have no other cause. The midsts where bad spirits abound are then impregnated with bad fluids, which are absorbed through all the peri-spiritual pores, as by the pores of the body pestilential miasmata are absorbed.

19. It is the same in assemblies of embodied beings. An assembly of people is a focus whence radiate diverse thoughts. Thought acting upon the fluids,



as sound upon the air, these fluids carry thoughts to us, as the air brings to us sound. It can, then, in all truth be said that there are in these fluids waves and rays of thought, which increase without confounding themselves, as there are in the air waves and rays of sound. An assembly of persons is, like an orchestra, a choir of thoughts, where each one produces his note. The result is a multitude of fluid-flowing effluvia, of which each one receives an impression by the spiritual sense, as in a musical choir each receives the impression of the sounds by the sense of hearing.

20. But, as there are harmonious or discordant sounds, there are also harmonious or discordant thoughts. If all is harmonious, the impression is agreeable; if otherwise, painful. There is no need for the thought to be formed into words. The fluid-radiation exists all the same, whether it be expressed or not; but, if some evil thoughts are mingled with it, they produce the effect of a current of icy air in a warm atmosphere. Such is the cause of the sentiment of satisfaction that is experienced in a sympathetic re-union, animated by good and benevolent thoughts. It reigns there like a salubrious moral atmosphere, which one breathes with ease. One is strengthened there, because it is impregnated with salutary fluid effluvia. Thus is explained also the anxiety, the indefinable uneasiness, that one feels in antipathetical surroundings, where malevolent thoughts are called forth like currents of nauseous air. Thought produces, then, a substantial effect, which re-acts upon our moral being. Spiritism alone can explain it. Man instinctively feels it, since he seeks homogeneous and sympathetic re-unions, where

he knows that he can draw new moral forces. One could say that he retrieves there the fluid losses that he makes each day by the radiation of thought, as he makes up the losses of the material body by food.

Thought, indeed, is an emission which occasions a real loss in the spiritual fluids, and consequently in the material fluids, also in such a way that man has need of strengthening himself by the effluvia which he receives from outside.

21. When a doctor is said to cure his patient by pleasant words, it is an absolute truth; for the benevolent thought carries with it healing fluids, which act physically as well as morally. It is possible, without doubt, to evade men of well-known malicious intentions; but how can we be preserved from the influence of undeveloped spirits which multiply around us, and glide everywhere without being seen? The means are very simple; for it depends upon the will of the man himself, who carries within him the necessary preservative. Fluids unite by reason of the similitude of their nature. Dissimilar ones repel each other. There is an incompatibility between good and bad fluids, as between oil and water. What is done when the air becomes vitiated? They purify it by destroying the centre of the miasma by chasing out the unhealthy effluvium by currents of salubrious air stronger than it; and, as each one has in his own peri-spirit a permanent fluid-source, the remedy is within one's self. It acts only to purify this source or spring, and to give to it such qualities as are necessary to repel bad influences, in place of being an attractive force. The peri-spirit is, then, a

breastplate to which it is necessary to give the best possible character. Now, as the qualities of the peri-spirit correspond with the qualities of the soul, it is necessary to work for its own amelioration; for it is the imperfections of the soul which attract bad spirits. Flies go where centres of corruption attract them. Destroy these centres, and the flies will disappear. In the same way bad spirits go where evil attracts them. Destroy the evil, and they will flee. Spirits really good, whether embodied or disembodied, have nothing to fear from the influence of bad spirits.

22. *Explanation of Some Facts reputed to be Supernatural.*—The peri-spirit is the connecting link between corporal and spiritual life. By it the embodied spirit is in continual rapport with disembodied spirits. In short, it is by it that special phenomena are accomplished in man, the first cause of which is not found in tangible matter, and which for this reason seem supernatural. It is necessary to seek for the cause of second or spiritual sight in the properties and radiations of peri-spiritual fluids, which can also be called psychic sight, with which many persons are endowed, as well as another called somnambulic sight, often unknown to them. The peri-spirit is the sensitive organ of the spirit. By its intermediation the embodied spirit obtains the perception of spiritual things which escape the carnal sense. By it the organs of the body—sight, hearing, and the diverse sensations—are localized and limited to the perception of material things. By the spiritual sense they are generalized. The spirit sees, hears, and feels through all his being, that which is in the sphere of the radiation of his peri-spiritual fluid. These

phenomena are, with man, the manifestation of the spiritual life. It is the soul which acts outside the organism.

In second sight, or perception by the spiritual sense, objects are not seen by the material eye, although by habit it often directs them towards the point to which attention is diverted. The clairvoyant sees with the soul's eyes; and the proof of it is that he sees all as well with the eyes closed as open, and also beyond the compass of the visual radius.<sup>1</sup>

23. Although, during life, the spirit is chained to the body by the peri-spirit, it is not such a slave that it cannot lengthen its chain, and transport itself to afar in some point in space or upon the earth. The spirit is only with regret attached to the body, because his normal life is liberty, whilst the corporal one is like that of a serf bound to the soil. The spirit is then as happy to leave his body as the bird to leave his cage. It seizes all occasions for freeing itself from it, and profits by all instances where its presence is not necessary to the relation of life. It is the phenomenon designated under the name of emancipation of the soul. It takes place in sleep. Every time that the body reposes and the senses are inactive, the spirit releases itself. (See "Spirits' Book," chap. 8.)

In these moments the spirit sees spiritual life, whilst the body sees only vegetative life. It is partially in the state in which it will be after death: it passes through space, holds converse with friends,

<sup>1</sup> See facts in regard to double sight and somnambule lucidity reported in the *Revue Spirite* of Jan., 1858, p. 25; Nov., 1858, p. 513; July, 1861, p. 197; Nov., 1865, p. 352.

and other free or disembodied spirits like itself. The fluid-link which holds it to the body is not broken until death. A complete separation does not take place until the absolute extinction of the activity of the vital principle.

So long as the body lives, the spirit, at whatever distance it may be, is instantly recalled to it as soon as its presence is necessary; then it resumes its relation with the course of exterior life. Sometimes, upon the awakening of the body, it preserves the remembrance of its peregrinations, — an impression more or less distinct, which constitutes a dream. It is *en rapport*, in all cases, with the intuitions which are suggested to it by new thoughts and ideas, and justify the proverb, “Night brings counsel and advice.” Thus are also explained certain characteristic phenomena of natural and magnetic somnambulism, catalepsy, lethargy, ecstasy, etc., and which are none other than manifestations of spiritual life.<sup>1</sup>

24. Since spiritual sight is not given through eyes of the flesh, the perception of things is not given by any ordinary light: indeed, material light is made for the material world. For the spiritual world there exists a special luminary, the nature of which is unknown to us, but which is, without doubt, one of the properties of the ethereal fluid affected by the visual perceptions of the soul. There is, then, material and spiritual light. The first has circumscribed focuses from luminous bodies; the second has its focus everywhere: therefore, there are no obstacles to spiritual

<sup>1</sup> See examples of lethargy and catalepsy: *Revue Spirite*, Madame Schwabenhaus, Sept., 1858, p. 255; *The Young Cataleptic of Souabe*, Jan., 1866, p. 18.

sight. It is neither arrested by distance nor by the opacity of matter: nothing dims it. The spiritual world is then illuminated by a spiritual light which has its characteristic power, as the material world has its solar light.

25. The soul enveloped in its peri-spirit carries thus in it its principle, light. Penetrating matter by virtue of its ethereal essence, there are no opaque bodies to its vision. However, the spiritual sight has not the same penetration or extent with all spirits. The *pure* spirits alone possess it in all its power. With inferior ones it is weakened by the coarseness of the peri-spirit, which interposes itself like a fog. It manifests itself in different degrees with embodied spirits by the phenomenon of second sight, whether in a natural or magnetic somnambulism, or in a waking state.

According to the power of the faculty is the lucidity, more or less great. By the aid of this faculty certain persons see the interior of the organism, and describe the cause of maladies.

26. Spiritual sight gives, then, special perceptions, which, being not seated in the material organs, operate by conditions totally different from the corporal sight. For the same reason one cannot expect identical effects, or experiment with it by the same means. Being accomplished outside of the organism, it has a mobility which baffles all foresight. It is necessary to study all its causes and effects, and not by assimilation with ordinary sight, which it is not intended to supply, except in exceptional cases, which must not be taken as a rule.

27. Spiritual sight is necessarily incomplete and imperfect with embodied spirits, therefore subject to

aberrations. Having its seat in the soul itself, the state of the soul must sway the perceptions it gives. According to the degree of its development, the circumstances and moral state of the individual, it can give either in sleep or in a waking state, — firstly, the perception of certain material, real facts, as the knowledge of past events, descriptive details of a locality, the causes of a disease, and the proper remedies; secondly, the perception of things equally real in the spiritual world, as a sight of spirit-forms; thirdly, fantastic images created by the imagination, analogous to fluid creations of thought. (See No. 14 and preceding numbers of this chapter.) These creations are always *en rapport* with the moral disposition of the spirit who gives birth to them. Thus, to persons very strongly imbued and pre-occupied with religious beliefs, hell is presented, its furnaces, its tortures, its demons, such as they imagine them to be. Sometimes it is an epic poem. The pagans saw Olympus and the Tartarean depths, as the Christians see Paradise and Hell.

28. If, upon awakening or coming out of the ecstasy, these persons preserve a distinct remembrance of their visions, they take it for the reality and confirmation of their belief, while it is only a product of their own thoughts.<sup>1</sup>

29. Inert matter is insensible. Peri-spiritual fluid

<sup>1</sup> The visions of sister Elmerich can thus be explained, who, carrying herself back to the time of the passion of Christ, is said to have seen material things which have never existed, only in the books which she had read; also those of Madame Cantonille (*Revue Spirite*, Aug., 1866, p. 240), and a part of those of Swedenborg (*Revue Spirite*, June, 1866, p. 172; Sept., 1866, p. 281. *Spirits' Book*, chap. 8, No. 400).

is equally so; but it transmits the sensation to the sensitive centre, which is the spirit. Painful injuries of the body reflect themselves then in the spirit like an electric shock, by the intermediation of the peri-spiritual fluid, of which the nerves appear to be the conducting threads. This is the nerve-power of the physiologists, who, knowing not the connection of this fluid with the spiritual principle, have not been able to explain all the effects. An interruption can take place by the separation of a limb, or dissection of a nerve, but also partially, or in a general manner, without any injury, in moments of emancipation, over-excitability, or pre-occupation of the spirit.

30. In this state the spirit thinks no more of the body; and in his feverish activity he attracts, as it were, the peri-spiritual fluid to him, which, being withdrawn from the surface, produces there a momentary insensibility. Thus, in the ardor of combat, a military man does not perceive he is wounded. A person whose attention is concentrated upon a work hears not the noise which is made around him. An analogous effect, but more pronounced, takes place with somnambulists in lethargy and catalepsy. Thus, in short, can be explained the insensibility of *convulsionnaires* and of certain martyrs ("Revue Spirite," January, 1868: Study of the Aïssaouas). Paralysis does not proceed from the same cause. With it the effect is entirely organic. It is the nerves themselves, the conducting threads, which are unqualified for the fluid circulation; it is the chords of the instrument which are broken or injured. In diseased states of the body, when the spirit is no longer in it, and the peri-spirit adheres to it only at a few points, the body



has all the appearance of death; and one is absolutely correct in saying life hangs by a single thread. This state can continue for more or less time. Certain parts of the body can even decompose without life being entirely extinguished.

As long as the last thread is not broken, the spirit can, either by an energetic action of its own will, or by a strange fluid influx, equally powerful, be recalled to the body. Thus can be explained certain prolongations of life against all probability, and certain pretended resurrections. A plant sometimes puts forth only one sprout from its root; but when the last molecules of the fluid body are detached from the carnal one, or when the latter is in a state of irreparable decay, all return to life becomes impossible.<sup>1</sup>

31. The universal fluid is, as has been seen, the primitive element of the carnal body and of the peri-spirit, which are only transformations of it. By the sameness of its nature this fluid can furnish to the body the principal reparatives. Being condensed in the peri-spirit, the propelling power is spirit, embodied or disembodied, which infiltrates into a deteriorated body a part of the substance of its fluid-envelope. The cure is performed by the substitution of a healthy molecule for an unhealthy one. The curative power will then be drawn from the purity of the inoculated substance. It depends also upon the energy of the will, which provokes a more abundant fluid-emission, and gives to the fluid a greater force of penetration. In short, it is the intentions of him

<sup>1</sup> *Revue Spirite*: Dr. Cardon, Aug., 1863, p. 251; the *Woman Corse*, May, 1866, p. 134.

who desires to cure, let him be man or spirit. The fluids which emanate from an impure source are like defective medical substances.

32. The effects of the fluid-action upon invalids are very varied according to circumstances. Its action is sometimes slow, and requires a prolonged treatment, as in ordinary magnetism. At other times it is rapid as an electric current.

There are some persons endowed with such a magnetic power, that they perform upon certain invalids instantaneous cures by manipulation, or sometimes by the sole act of the will. Between the two extreme poles of this faculty there is an infinite variety of distinctive shades. All the cures of this kind are from the different varieties of magnetism, and differ only in the power and rapidity of their action. The principle is always the same. It is the fluid which plays the *rôle* of therapeutic agent, the effect of which is subordinated to its quality and to special circumstances.

33. Magnetic action can be produced in many ways, — firstly, by the fluid of the magnetizer himself; properly speaking, magnetism, or human magnetism, the action of which is subordinate to the power, and above all to the quality of the fluid. Secondly, by fluid from the spirit acting directly and without intermediation upon an incarnated being, either to cure or to calm suffering, to provoke spontaneous, somnambulistic sleep, or to exercise over the individual any moral or physical influence whatever. That is spiritual magnetism, of which the quality is determined by the quality of the spirit.<sup>1</sup> Thirdly,

<sup>1</sup> Examples: *Revue Spirite*, Feb., 1863, p. 64; April, 1865, p. 133; *Scpt.*, 1865, p. 264.

by the fluid which the spirits shed upon the magnetizer, to which the latter serves as conductor.

This is mixed magnetism, half spiritual, or *humano-spirituel*. The spiritual fluid, combined with the physical, gives to the latter the qualities which are wanting to it. The meeting of spirits for a like circumstance is sometimes spontaneous, but more often it is brought about by the call of the magnetizer.

34. The faculty to cure by the fluid-influx is very common, and can develop itself by exercise; but that of curing instantaneously by the laying-on of hands is rarer, and its power can be considered as exceptional. However, it has been seen at diverse epochs, and in nearly every nation there are some individuals who possess it to an eminent degree. Lately many remarkable examples have been seen of it, the authenticity of which cannot be contested. Since these kinds of cures rest upon a principle of nature, the power of performing them is not a preference shown, or a departure from nature's laws. They can only be miraculous in appearance.<sup>1</sup>

35. The peri-spirit is invisible to us in its normal state; but, as it is formed of ethereal matter, the spirit can, in certain cases, make it submit by an act of the will to a molecular modification, which renders it momentarily visible. Thus apparitions are produced which no more than other phenomena are outside of the laws of nature. The latter are no more

<sup>1</sup> Examples of instantaneous cures reported in the *Revue Spirite*: the Prince of Hohenlohe, Dec., 1866, p. 368; Jacob, Oct. and Nov., 1866, pp. 842 and 345; Oct. and Nov., 1867, pp. 306 and 339; Simonet, Aug., 1867, p. 232; Caïd Hassan, Oct., 1867, p. 303; the curate Gassner, Nov., 1867, p. 331.

extraordinary than that of vapor, which is invisible when it is very rarefied, and which becomes visible when it is condensed.

According to the degree of condensation of the peri-spiritual fluid, the apparition is sometimes vague and vaporous; and at other times it is more distinctly defined: at others it has quite the appearance of tangible matter. It can even reach tangibility sufficiently to be mistaken for a person in the flesh. Vaporous apparitions are frequent; and it often happens that some individuals present themselves thus, after death, to persons whom they have loved. Tangible apparitions are rarer, although there have been numerous examples of them which are perfectly authentic. If the spirit can make itself recognized, it will give to its envelope all the exterior signs which it had in life.

36. Let us remark that tangible apparitions have only the appearance of carnal matter, but would not know how to obtain its qualities. By reason of their fluid nature, they cannot have the same cohesion, because that in reality they are not of the flesh. They are instantaneously formed, and disappear in the same manner, or are evaporated by the disintegration of the fluid-molecules. Beings which present themselves by these conditions are neither born nor die like other men: they appear and vanish without knowing whence they come, how they have come, or where they will go. They could not be killed, chained, or incarcerated, because they have no carnal body. By attempting to strike them, one would only strike into space. Such is the character of the spirits with whom we can converse without

doubting their true individuality, yet who never make long visits, cannot become habitual boarders in a house, nor figure among the members of a family. There is besides in all their person, in their manner, something strange and unusual which divides spirituality from materiality. The expression of their eyes, vaporous and penetrating at the same time, has not the distinctness of those of the flesh ; their language brief, and nearly always sententious, has nothing of the brilliancy and volubility of human language ; their approach makes us experience a particular, indefinable sensation of surprise, which inspires a sort of fear ; and it is involuntarily said by all who compare them with human beings, "Here is a singular being."

37. The peri-spirit being the same with the embodied and disembodied, by a completely identical effect an embodied spirit can appear in a moment, when he is freed from the flesh, at another point than that where his body is reposing, with his habitual features and all the signs of his identity.

It is this phenomenon, of which authentic examples are given, which has caused belief in double or dual men.<sup>1</sup>

38. A particular effect of this kind of phenomena is, that the vaporous and even tangible apparitions

<sup>1</sup> Examples of vaporous or tangible apparitions and of agénères : *Revue Spirite*, Jan., 1858, p. 24; Oct., 1858, p. 291; Feb., 1859, p. 38; March, 1859, p. 80; Jan., 1859, p. 11; Nov., 1859, p. 303; Aug., 1859, p. 210; April, 1860, p. 117; May, 1860, p. 150; July, 1861, p. 199; April, 1866, p. 120; the laborer Martin presented to Louis XVIII., complete details; Dec., 1866, p. 353. Examples of apparitions of living persons: *Revue Spirite*, Dec., 1858, pp. 329 and 331; Feb., 1859, p. 41; Aug., 1859, p. 197; Nov., 1860, p. 356.

are indistinctly perceptible to everybody. The spirits show themselves only when they desire, and to whom they desire. A spirit would then be able to appear in an assembly to one or more persons, and not be seen by all. The reason for which is, that the spiritual, and not the material, sight is used ; for not only has the spiritual sight not been given to every one, but it can, when necessary, be withheld by the desire of the spirit from him to whom he wishes not to show himself, as he can momentarily give it if he deems it necessary.

The condensation of the peri-spiritual fluid in apparitions even to the tangible state has, then, not the properties of ordinary matter : otherwise the apparitions, being perceptible to the bodily eye, would be presented to all.<sup>1</sup>

39. The spirit being able to accomplish transformations by means of his peri-spiritual envelope, and this envelope having the power to radiate around bodies like a fluid-atmosphere, a phenomenon analogous to that of apparitions can be produced on the surface of bodies even. Under the fluid film the real figure of the body can be effaced more or less completely, and be re-invested with other features ; or, rather, the original features seen through a modified fluid-film, as through a prism, can assume another expression. If the spirit, in going from

<sup>1</sup> We must be very cautious in accepting as facts strictly individual recitals of apparitions, which in certain cases may have been the effect of an over-excited imagination, or an invention for some selfish end. It is well, then, to gain a careful account of the circumstances, of the respectability of the person, as well as the interest they might have in abusing the credulity of too-confiding individuals.

earth to earth, identifies itself with things of the spiritual world, the expression of a homely face can become beautiful, radiant, and sometimes even luminous; if, on the contrary, it is the prey to bad passions, a beautiful face can take a hideous aspect. Thus are transfigurations performed, which are always a reflection of the qualities and predominating sentiments of the spirit. This phenomenon is, then, the result of a fluid transformation. It is a kind of peri-spiritual apparition which is produced upon even living bodies, and sometimes at the moment of death, instead of producing itself at a distance, as apparitions are generally seen. That which is the distinguishing peculiarity of this kind of apparitions is, that they are generally perceptible to all present by the eye of the flesh, because they are based upon visible, carnal matter, whilst in purely fluid displays of the same there is no tangible matter employed.<sup>1</sup>

40. The phenomena of moving and conversing by means of tables, of mediumistic writing (as ancient as the world, but common to-day), give the key to many spontaneous, analogous phenomena, to which, by ignorance of the law which governs them, they attributed a supernatural and miraculous character. These phenomena rest upon the properties of the peri-spiritual fluid of either incarnated beings or free spirits.

41. It is by the aid of its peri-spirit that the spirit acts upon his living body. It is with this same fluid that it manifests itself by acting upon inert matter; that it produces sounds, movement of tables, and

<sup>1</sup> Example and theory of transfiguration: *Revue Spirite*, March, 1859, p. 62; *Book of Mediums*, chap. 7, p. 142.

raises, overturns, or transports other objects. There is nothing surprising in this phenomena if one considers that with us the most powerful motive-powers are found in the most rarefied and even imponderable fluids, like air, vapor, and electricity. It is equally by the aid of his peri-spirit that the spirit enables mediums to speak, write, or sketch. Having no tangible body to manifest, he serves himself with the body of the medium, from which he borrows the organs and uses as if it were his own, obtaining possession of it by the fluid-effluvium which he throws around it.

42. By the same means the spirit acts upon the table, either to make it simply move, or give intelligent raps, indicating the letters of the alphabet, in order to form words or phrases, a phenomenon named "typtology." Here the table is only an instrument for use, as a pencil in writing. It gives to it a momentary vitality by the fluid with which it penetrates it; but it *does not identify itself with it*. Persons who, in their emotion at being able to communicate with friends dear to them, embrace the table perform a foolish act; for it is absolutely the same as if they should embrace the stick which a friend uses to make the raps. It is equivalent to saying that the spirit was enclosed in the wood of the table, or that the wood had become spirit. When communications like these take place, it is necessary to represent the spirit as not in the table, but beside us as he was in life; and thus they would see him if their spiritual eyes were open. The same in obtaining communications by writing: one would see the spirit beside the medium, directing or transmitting to him his ideas by a fluid-current.



43. When the table is detached from the ground, and floats in space without support, the spirit does not raise it by arm-strength, but by the envelope; and penetrates it with a sort of fluid-atmosphere, which neutralizes the effect of gravitation, as the air does for balloons and kites. The fluid with which it is permeated gives momentarily a greater specific lightness. When it is nailed to the ground, it is in a condition analogous to that of the pneumatic receiver under which the air is exhausted. These comparisons here are only to show the analogy of effects, and not the absolute similitude of causes ("Mediums' Book," chap. 4). One can comprehend, after this, that it is no more difficult to raise a person than a table, to transport an object from one place to another, than to throw it somewhere. These phenomena are produced by the same laws.<sup>1</sup>

When the table pursues a person, it is not the spirit who runs, for he can remain tranquilly in the same place; but, by the aid of his will, he gives

<sup>1</sup> Such is the principle of the phenomenon of levitation, or the rising of bodies upwards, and suspension in the air, with no visible means of support, — an actual phenomenon, but which must be accepted with extreme reserve; for it is one which lends itself the most to imposture and jugglery. The absolute worthiness of the person who obtains them, his entire material and moral disinterestedness, and the co-operation of accessory circumstances, must be taken into serious consideration. It is necessary to distrust the too great facility with which these effects are produced, and to be doubtful of those who renew them too frequently, as it were, by will-power. The prestidigitators do most extraordinary things. The raising of a person into mid-air is a fact no less positive, but much more rare, perhaps, because it is more difficult to imitate.

It is generally known that Mr. Home has been more than once elevated to the ceiling in this manner, making the tour of the hall. St. Cupertin is said to have had this same power, which is no more miraculous in one than the other.

the fluid-current an impulsion. When the raps are heard on a table or elsewhere, the spirit does not rap with his hand or with any instrument whatever: he directs upon the point whence the noise proceeds a stream of fluid, which produces the effect of an electric shock. He changes the sound, as sounds produced by air can be modified.<sup>1</sup>

44. A phenomenon which is very common in mediumship is the aptitude of certain mediums to write in a language which is unknown to them, — to speak or write upon subjects outside of their knowledge. It is not rare to see those who write rapidly without having learned to write; others still who become poets, without ever having before composed a line of poetry; others sketch, paint, sculp, compose music, play on an instrument, without having previously known any thing of either accomplishment. Very frequently the writing-medium reproduces the writing and signature of the spirits communicating by him, although he had never known them in earth-life. This phenomenon is not more wonderful than to see a child write when some one conducts his hand. One can thus perform all that one wishes. Any person could write in any language whatever by dictating the words letter by letter.

<sup>1</sup> Examples of material manifestations and perturbations by the Spirits: *Revue Spirite*, Young Girl of Panoramas, Jan., 1858, p. 13; Miss Clairon, Feb., 1858, p. 14; Spirit-Rapper of Bergzabern, complete account, May, June, and July of 1858, pp. 125, 153, 184; Dibbelsdorf, Aug., 1858, p. 219; Boulanger of Dieppe, March, 1860, p. 76; Merchant of St. Petersburg, April 1860, p. 115; Noyers St., Aug., 1860, p. 236; Spirit-Rapper of Aube, Jan., 1861, p. 23; *Id.*, in the 16th century, Jan., 1864, p. 32; Poitiers, May, 1864, p. 156, and May, 1865, p. 134; Sister Mary, June, 1865, p. 185; Marseilles, April, 1865, p. 121; Fives, Aug., 1865, p. 225; the Rats of Esquihem, Feb., 1866, p. 55.

45. It is the same with mediumship. Mediums are only passive instruments in the spirit's hands. But if the medium possesses a knowledge of the mechanism of it, if he has vanquished the practical difficulties of it, if the expressions are familiar to him, if he has, in short, in his brain the elements of that which the spirit desires him to execute, he is in the position of the man who knows how to read and write rapidly. The work is easier and more rapid. The spirit has only to transmit the thought that his interpreter reproduces by means at his disposal. The aptitude of a medium in things which are strange to him is often caused by the knowledge he has obtained in another existence, of which his mind has preserved the intuition. If he has been a poet or a musician, for example, his mind will the more readily grasp the poetical and musical ideas which they wish to reproduce. The language of which he is now ignorant may have been familiar to him in another existence : hence he has a greater aptitude as a writing-medium in this language.<sup>1</sup>

Bad spirits increase most abundantly around the earth on account of the moral inferiority of its inhabitants. Their wrong-doing in a measure is the cause of the plagues to which humanity is exposed here below. Obsession, which is one of the effects of this action, like maladies and all tribulations of

<sup>1</sup> The aptitude of certain persons for languages which they have never learned is caused by an intuitive remembrance of that which they have learned in another existence. The example of the poet Méry, reported in the *Revue Spirite* of Nov., 1864, p. 328, is a proof of it. It is evident, that, if Mr. Méry had been a medium in his youth, he would have written in Latin as easily as in French, and would have been called a prodigy.

life, must then be considered as a trial or expiation, and accepted as such. Obsession is the persistent action which a bad spirit exercises over an individual. It presents many different characters, from the moral influence without any distinct exterior signs to complete disturbance of the organism and of the mental faculties. It destroys all mediumistic faculties. In auditive and psychographic mediumship an obstinate spirit manifests to the exclusion of all others.

46. Just as maladies are the result of physical imperfections which render the body accessible to pernicious exterior influences, obsession is always that of a moral imperfection, which gives place to a bad spirit. To a physical cause one opposes a physical force; to a moral cause it is necessary to oppose a moral force. In order to preserve one's self from maladies, one must fortify the body; in order to guarantee one's self against obsession, one must fortify the soul: hence for the obsessed the necessity for working for his own amelioration, which is often sufficient to cure obsession without foreign aid. This aid becomes necessary when obsession degenerates into complete subjugation and possession; for then the patient sometime loses his volition and free will.

Obsession is nearly always due to vengeance, exercised by a spirit, and which most often has its source in connections which the obsessed has had with it in a previous existence. In case of grave obsession the obsessed is enveloped and impregnated with a pernicious fluid, which neutralizes the action of the salutary fluids, and repels them. It is necessary to remove this fluid. Now a bad fluid cannot be re-

pelled by a bad fluid. By an action similar to that of a healing medium in a case of illness, it is necessary to expel the bad fluid by the aid of a better one. The latter, which is mechanical action, does not always suffice. It is necessary, above all, to act upon the intelligent being, to whom it is necessary to speak with authority, and this authority is given only to moral superiority. The greater the latter is, the greater the authority.

That is not all, however. It is necessary to lead the perverse spirit to renounce his bad designs; to awaken within him a desire to do good, and true repentance, by the aid of cleverly directed instructions, by the evoking of particular spirits to aid him in his moral education. Then one can have the double satisfaction of delivering an incarnated being, and of converting an undeveloped spirit. The task is rendered easier if the obsessed, comprehending his situation, joins his will and prayers with yours. It is not thus when the latter, seduced by the deceiving spirit, is deluded in regard to the qualities of his ruler, and delights in the error into which the latter plunges him; for then, far from seconding, he repels all assistance. Such are cases of fascination always vastly more obstinate than the most violent subjugation. (See "*Mediums' Book*," chap. 23.) In all cases of obsession prayer is the most powerful auxiliary to act against the obsessing spirit.

47. In obsession the spirit acts exteriorly by the aid of its peri-spirit, which he mingles with that of the embodied beings. The latter finds himself bound as if in a network, and constrained to act against his will. In taking possession of a human organism, the

free spirit substitutes itself, as it were, for that of the incarnated one, instead of acting exteriorly : he chooses a home in his body, although its owner does not leave it entirely, which can take place only after death. The possession is then only temporary and intermittent ; for a disembodied spirit has not the power to take exclusive possession of a human organism, only when the molecular union of the peri-spirit and body can be performed at the moment of conception (chap. XI., No. 18). The spirit in momentary possession of the body uses it as his own. He speaks through its mouth, sees with its eyes, moves its arms as he had done in life. It is not as in mediumship when the incarnated spirit speaks the thoughts of a disembodied spirit, which are transmitted through him. It is the latter who speaks ; and, if one has known him in life, one recognizes him by his language, voice, and gestures, even to the expression of his face.

48. Obsession is always due to the influence of a malevolent spirit. Possession can be taken of a human being by a good spirit, who desires to speak in order to make a deeper impression upon his auditors, borrows the medium's body, as the latter loans it to him voluntarily as he would lend his coat. This is done without any trouble or bad effect ; and during this time the medium's spirit is free as in a state of emancipation, and he frequently remains beside his substitute in order to listen to him. When the spirit in possession is a bad one, all is otherwise : he does not borrow the body, but forcibly takes possession of it if the owner has not moral force sufficient to resist him. He does it for malice towards the latter, whom

he tortures and torments in every way, desiring to kill him either by strangulation, or by throwing him in the fire or other dangerous places. Using the limbs and organs of the unhappy patient, he blasphemes, injures, and maltreats those who surround him,—delivers him to eccentricities of action, which have the character of an insane person.

Cases of this kind, of different degrees of intensity, are very numerous; and many cases of insanity have had no other cause. Often it is joined to pathological disorders which follow the course of time, and against which medical treatment is powerless as long as the first cause exists. Spiritism, by giving a knowledge of the source of a part of human suffering, indicates the means for curing it. This remedy is to act upon the author of the evil, who, being an intelligent being, must be treated intelligently.<sup>1</sup> Obsession and possession are mostly individual cases, but sometimes they are epidemic. When a troop of undeveloped spirits take up their abode in a locality, it is as when a troop of enemies come to surround it. In this case the number of individuals attacked by them can be many.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Examples of cures by obsession and possession: *Revue Spirite*, Dec., 1863, p. 373; Jan., 1864, p. 11; June, 1864, p. 168; Jan., 1865, p. 5; June, 1865, p. 172; Feb., 1866, p. 38; June, 1867, p. 174.

<sup>2</sup> It was an epidemic of this kind which took place some years ago in the village of Morzine, Savoy. See the complete history of this epidemic in the *Revue Spirite* of Dec., 1862, p. 353; Jan., Feb., April, and May, 1863, pp. 1, 33, 101, 133.

## CHAPTER XV.

THE MIRACLES OF THE GOSPEL. — PRELIMINARY OBSERVATIONS. — DREAMS. — STAR OF THE "WISE MEN OF THE EAST." — DOUBLE SIGHT. — CURES. — POSSESSED PERSONS. — RESURRECTIONS. — JESUS WALKS UPON THE WATER. — TRANSFIGURATION. — THE TEMPEST STILLED. — MARRIAGE AT CANA. — MAKING OF THE LOAVES OF BREAD. — TEMPTATION OF JESUS. — WONDERFUL THINGS AT THE DEATH OF JESUS. — APPEARANCE OF JESUS AFTER HIS DEATH. — DISAPPEARANCE OF THE BODY OF JESUS.

1. *Preliminary Remarks.* — The facts reported in the Gospels, and which have been considered until recently miraculous, belong for the most part to the order of psychic phenomena, — those which arise from the faculties and attributes of the soul. By comparing them with those which have been described and explained in the preceding chapter, one recognizes between them an identity of cause and effect. History shows analogous instances in all time and among all nations, for the reason that, ever since souls have been embodied and disembodied, the same effects must have been produced. One can, it is true, contest the veracity of history upon this point; but now they are produced under our eyes, as it were, by will-power, and by individuals who have nothing exceptional about them. The fact alone of the reproduction of a phenomenon in identical conditions suffices to prove that it is possible, and governed by



a law of nature, and that it therefore is not miraculous. The principle of the psychic phenomena reposes, as has been seen, upon the properties of the peri-spiritual fluid, which constitutes the magnetic agent upon the manifestations of the spiritual life during life and after death, — in short, upon the constitutive of the spirits and their *rôle* as the active force of nature. These elements known, and their effects ascertained, the result is, that certain facts must be admitted as such which were formerly rejected when attributed to a supernatural origin.

2. Without prejudging any thing of the nature of Christ, let it not enter into the compass of this book to consider him as aught else than a superior spirit, — one of those of the highest order; and let him be placed only by his virtues above the rest of terrestrial humanity. By the great results which he produced, his incarnation into this world could have been only one of those missions which are confided alone to direct messengers from the Most High for the accomplishment of his designs. By supposing that he was not God himself, but an ambassador of his for the transmission of his word, he would be more than a prophet: he would be a divine Messiah. As man, he had the organization of organized beings; but as a pure spirit, detached from matter, he must have lived in the spiritual life more than in the carnal, of which he had not the weaknesses. His superiority over men was only of his spiritual nature, which absolutely controlled matter, and his peri-spirit, which was formed of the most refined of earthly fluids (chap. XIV., No. 9).

His soul must have been attached to the body only

by the most indispensable ligaments constantly separated from one another. It must have endowed him with a double sight, not only permanent, but of an exceptional penetration, very superior to that of ordinary men. It must have been the same with all the phenomena which depend upon the peri-spiritual or psychic fluids. The quality of these fluids gave to him an immense magnetic power, seconded by a constant desire to do good. In the cures which he performed, did he act as a medium? Can he be considered as a powerful healing medium? No: for the medium is an intermediary, an instrument which disembodied spirits use. Now, Christ had no need of assistance, he who assisted others: he acted, then, by himself, by virtue of his personal power. Thus can incarnated beings, in certain cases, do according to their strength. What other spirit would have dared to inspire him with his own thoughts, and charge him to transmit them? If he received a strange influx, it could only be from God. According to a definition given of him by a spirit, he was a medium from God.

3. *Dreams.* — Joseph, the Gospel narrative states, was warned by an angel who appeared to him in a dream, and who said to him, "Take the young child, and flee into Egypt" (St. Matt., chap. ii., vers. 19-23). Warnings by dreams play an important part in the sacred works of all religions. Without guaranteeing the exactitude of all the facts reported, and without discussing them, the phenomenon has nothing in itself anomalous when one knows that in sleep the spirit frees itself from its imprisonment in matter, and enters again momentarily into the spiritual life,

where it finds itself again with those whom it has known. It often happens that this moment is chosen by guardian angels to manifest themselves to their charges, in order to give them more direct counsel. Authentic examples of warnings by dreams are numerous; but it is not necessary to infer that all dreams are warnings, and still less that all have a signification. It is well to reckon the art of interpreting dreams among superstitious and absurd beliefs (chap. XIV., Nos. 27 and 28).

4. *The Star of the "Wise Men of the East."* — It is written that a star appeared to the wise men who came to worship Jesus; that it went before them to indicate the route to them, and stood still when they had arrived at their destination (St. Matt., chap. ii., vers. 1-12). The question is asked, not to ascertain if the statement given by St. Matthew is true, or if it is only a figure of speech to indicate that the wise men were mysteriously guided to the young child, because no means exist whereby it can be examined, but simply to ask if such a thing were possible. One thing is certain, that the light referred to could not have been a star. They could believe it at that epoch where the stars were thought to be luminous points attached to the firmament, which could fall upon the earth; but not now, when their nature is known. The right cause may now be attributed to it: the fact of a light in appearance like a star is a possible thing. A spirit can appear under a luminous form, or transfer a part of his peri-spiritual fluid to a luminous point. Many facts of this kind, recent and perfectly authentic, have no other cause; and this cause has nothing supernatural about it.

## SECOND SIGHT.

5. *Entry of Jesus into Jerusalem.* — ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXI. — 1. And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the Mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

2. Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her : loose them, and bring them unto me.

3. And if any man say aught unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them ; and straightway he will send them.

4. All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

5. Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.

6. And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them,

7. And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.

6. *The Kiss of Judas.* — ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXVI. — 46. Rise, let us be going : behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

47. And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people.

48. Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he : hold him fast.

49. And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, master ; and kissed him.

50. And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

7. *Miraculous Draught of Fishes.* — LUKE, CHAP. V. — 1. And it came to pass, that, as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennesaret,

2. And saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3. And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship.

4. Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.

5. And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net.

6. And when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes; and their net brake.

7. And they beckoned unto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

8. *Vocations of Peter, Andrew, James, John, and Matthew.* — ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. IV. — 18. And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.

19. And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

20. And they straightway left their nets, and followed him.

21. And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them.

22. And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him.

ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. IV.—9. And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

9. These facts are not surprising when one knows the power of second sight, and the natural cause of this faculty. Jesus possessed it in a supreme degree; and he can also have been at the time in his normal state, as a great number of his acts testify, and which is explained to-day by the magnetic phenomena and Spiritism. The miraculous draught of fishes is equally well explained by second sight. Jesus did not produce fishes spontaneously there where they did not exist. He has seen, as a lucide would have been able to do, by the eyes of the soul, the place where they were found; and he has been able to say with assurance to the fishers, "Cast there your nets into the sea." The power to fathom thought, by which foresight can be obtained, is the result of second sight. When Jesus called Peter to him, as well as Andrew, James, John, and Matthew, he must have known their dispositions intimately in order to know that they would follow him, and that they were capable of fulfilling the mission with which he must charge them. It was also necessary that they them-

selves should have an intuition of this mission in order to give themselves up to him. Again, it is the same at the Lord's Supper, when he announces that one of the twelve will betray him, and when he designates him by saying it is he who is placing his hand in the dish with him, and also when he says that Peter will deny him. In many places in the Gospels we read, "But Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said unto them." Now, how could he know their thoughts if it was not at the time in the fluid-radiance which carried their thoughts to him, and also the spiritual sight, which gave him power to read the mind of individuals? Then, often when one believes an idea profoundly shrouded in the depth of the soul, one doubts not that there is a mirror within which reflects it, — a revelator in its own fluid-radiance which is impregnated with it.

If we could see the mechanism of the invisible world which surrounds us, the ramifications of these conducting threads of thought which bind all intelligent beings, embodied and otherwise, the fluid-effluvia charged with imprints of the moral world, and which like aërial currents traverse space, one would be less surprised at certain effects that ignorance attributes to chance (chap. XIV., Nos. 22 and following ones).

#### CURES.

10. *The Woman who had the Issue of Blood.* — ST. MARK, CHAP. V. — 25. And a certain woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years,

26. And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27. When she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched his garment.

28. For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29. And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

30. And Jesus, immediately knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes?

31. And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

32. And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33. But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

34. And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

11. These words, "Knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him," are significant. They express the movement of the fluid which Jesus transferred to the invalid woman. Both have felt the action which has just been produced. It is remarkable that the effect has not been provoked by any will-power of Jesus. Neither magnetism nor manipulation were employed. The normal fluid-radiance was sufficient to effect the cure. But why was this radiance directed to the woman rather than to others, since Jesus did not think of her, and he was sur-



rounded by a multitude of people? The reason is very simple. The fluid, being given as therapeutic matter, must reach organic disorder in order to repair it. It can be directed upon the evil by the will of the healing medium, or attracted by the ardent desire, the confidence, or, in one word, the faith of the invalid. In regard to the fluid-current the first is the effect of forcing it, and the second of suction.

Sometimes the simultaneousness of the two effects is necessary; at others one alone suffices. The second has taken place in this circumstance. Jesus was then right in saying, "Your faith has made you whole." The faith expressed here is not the mystical virtue which some believe it to be, but a veritable attractive force; while he who has it not, opposes to the fluid-current a repelling force, or at least an inert one, which paralyzes action. After this, one can comprehend how two invalids attacked by the same illness, in the presence of a healing medium, one can be cured, and the other not. This is one of the most important principles of healing mediumship, and which explains, by a very natural cause, certain apparent anomalies (chap. XIV., Nos. 31-33).

12. *Blind Man of Bethsaida.* — ST. MARK, CHAP. VIII. — 22. And he cometh to Bethsaida; and they bring a blind man unto him, and besought him to touch him.

23. And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw aught.

24. And he looked up and said, I see men as trees, walking.

25. After that he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored, and saw every man clearly.

26. And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.

13. Here the effect of magnetism is evident. The cure has not been instantaneous but gradual, and in consequence of sustained and reiterated action, although more rapid than in ordinary magnetization. The first sensation of this man is that which blind men experience in recovering sight. By an optical illusion, objects appear to them of an inordinate size.

14. *The Paralyzed Man.* — ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. IX.—1. And he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city.

2. And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee.

3. And, behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

4. And Jesus knowing their thoughts said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?

5. For whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and walk?

6. But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins (then said he to the sick of the palsy), Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

7. And he arose, and departed to his house.

8. But when the multitudes saw it, they marvelled,

and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

15. What could these words signify, "Your sins are forgiven you"? and how could they help the cure? Spiritualism gives the key to them, as well as to an infinite number of other sayings misunderstood till now. It teaches us, by the law of the plurality of existences, that the evils and afflictions of life are often expiations of the past, and that we submit in the present life to the consequence of faults that we have committed in an anterior existence; the different existences being connected with one another, even to paying the debt of their imperfections. If, then, the malady of this man was a punishment for evil which he had committed, by saying to him, "Your sins are forgiven you," was equal to saying, "You have paid your debt. The cause of your malady is effaced by your present faith: consequently you merit to be delivered from your malady." He therefore said to the scribes, "It is as easy to say, Your sins are forgiven you, as to say, Arise, and walk:" the cause ceasing, the effect must cease also. The case is the same with a prisoner to whom they would go and say, "Your crime is expiated and pardoned;" which is equivalent to saying, "You can leave prison."

16. *The Ten Lepers.* — ST. LUKE, CHAP. XVII. —

11. And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

12. And as he entered into a certain villiage, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off:

13. And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us.

14. And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go show yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed.

15. And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God,

16. And fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan.

17. And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine?

18. There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.

19. And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.

17. The Samaritans were schismatics, as Protestants stand in regard to Catholics, and despised by the Jews as heretics. Jesus, by curing indiscriminately the Samaritans and the Jews, gave at the same time a lesson and example of tolerance; and, by showing that the Samaritan alone returned to give glory to God, it proved that there was in him more true faith and gratitude than with those who were called orthodox. By saying, "Your faith has saved you," he shows that God regards the feeling of the heart, and not the exterior form of adoration. However, the others have been cured: it was necessary for the lesson which he wished to give, and to prove their ingratitude. But who knows the result of it, and if they have profited by the favor which was accorded them? By saying to the Samaritan, "Your

faith has saved you," Jesus gives us to understand that it will not be the same with the others.

18. *The Withered Hand.*—ST. MARK, CHAP. III. —

1. And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there which had a withered hand.

2. And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day; that they might accuse him.

3. And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.

4. And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? But they held their peace.

5. And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

6. And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

7. But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judæa,

8. And from Jerusalem, and from Idumæa, and from beyond Jordan; and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him.

19. "*The Infirm Woman who was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself.*"—ST. LUKE, CHAP. XIII. — 10. And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.

11. And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself.

12. And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity.

13. And he laid his hands on her; and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

14. And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day.

15. The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering?

16. And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?

17. And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

20. This fact proves that at this epoch the greater number of maladies were attributed to demons, and that they confounded victims of obsession with people ill from other causes, but in an inverse sense; that is to say, now, those who do not believe in bad spirits think obsession is a pathological malady.

21. *The Impotent Man of the Pool of Bethesda.* — ST. JOHN, CHAP. V. — 1. After this there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

2. Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches.

3. In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

4. For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5. And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years.

6. When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

6. The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.

8. Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.

9. And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

10. The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath day: it is not lawful for thee to carry thy bed.

11. He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk.

12. Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk?

13. And he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in that place.

14. Afterwards Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.

15. The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus, which had made him whole.

16. And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath day.

17. But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

22. Pool (from the Latin *pisces*, fish) was with the Romans a reservoir or nurse-pond for fish. Later, it was understood to be a public bathing-place. The Pool of Bethesda, at Jerusalem, was a cistern near the Temple, fed by a natural spring, the water of which possessed healing properties. It was doubtless a circulating fountain, which, at certain times, burst forth with strength, and moved the water. According to common belief, this moment was the most favorable for cures. Perhaps, in reality, at the moment it gushed out, it had more active properties, or that the agitation produced by the gushing water stirred the mud at the bottom, which was beneficial for certain diseases.

These effects are natural, and perfectly well known now. But then there was but little advance in science, and they saw a supernatural cause for all or the most part of unknown phenomena. The Jews attributed the agitation of this water to the presence



of an angel; and this belief seemed to them so much the more reasonable, as at this moment the water was more salutary. After having cured this man, Jesus said to him, "Behold you are made whole: sin no more lest a worse thing come unto you." By these words he makes him to understand that his disease was a punishment, and that, if he did not cease sinning, he would be again punished more severely than ever. This doctrine conforms entirely to that which Spiritism teaches.

23. Jesus appears to have taken pains to perform cures on the sabbath, in order to have occasion to protest against the rigorous observance of the Pharisees of this day. He wished to show them that true piety consisted, not in the observance of forms and of outside things, but in the true worship of the heart. He justifies himself by saying, "My Father worketh hitherto, and I work;" that is to say, that God does not suspend the workings of nature on the sabbath. He continues to produce that which is necessary to your nourishment and health; and I am here to do his will.

24. *The Man born Blind.* — ST. JOHN, CHAP. IX. — 1. And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth.

2. And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?

3. Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

4. I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work.

5. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

6. When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay,

7. And said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent). He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

8. The neighbors therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged?

9. Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he.

10. Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11. He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight.

12. Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

13. They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind.

14. And it was the sabbath day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15. Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

16. Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them.

17. They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

18. But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight.

19. And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see?

20. His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind:

21. But by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself.

22. These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

23. Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.

24. Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner.

25. He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see.

26. Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27. He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?

28. Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples.

29. We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

30. The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth.

32. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind.

33. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

34. They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

25. This recital, so simple and artless, carries in itself an evident character of truth. There is nothing marvellous or fantastic about it: 'tis a scene from real life. The language of this blind man is that of one in which good, natural common sense supplies the place of knowledge, and who combats the arguments of his adversaries with simplicity, yet with an ability which is not wanting in justice.

Is not the speech of the Pharisee like that of proud men who think there is no knowledge outside of their own, and that a man of the people — one of the common herd — is unworthy of a single thought or remonstrance? Barring the name, we have the same kind of people in our day. To be expelled from the synagogue was equivalent to being excommunicated from the Church. The Spiritists, whose doctrines are those of Christ, interpreted according to

the progress of the present light, are treated as the Jews who recognized Jesus as the Messiah. By excommunicating them, they place them outside of the Church, as the scribes and the Pharisees did in regard to the followers of Jesus. In this narrative the man is expelled because he can believe only in him who has cured him, whether he be a sinner or one possessed by a demon, and because he glorifies God for his cure! Is not the same thing done to Spiritists? Because they obtain wise counsel from spirits, have returned to goodness and God, and perform cures, it is said to be the work of the Devil, and anathema is cast at them. Have we not heard priests from the high altar say, "It is better to remain an infidel than to return to the faith by Spiritism"?

Have we not heard them tell invalids that they must not be cured by Spiritists who possess this gift, because it is a gift from Satan? What did and said the Jewish priests and Pharisees more than that? Moreover, it is written that the same unbelief must be felt by some at this epoch of the world's history, as in the time of Christ. This question of the disciples — viz., "Is this man blind because of sin?" — indicates the knowledge of an anterior existence: otherwise no sense could be made of it; for the sin which would be the cause of an infirmity, which is born with a person, must have been committed before this birth, and consequently in an anterior existence. If Jesus had recognized a false idea in the question, he would have said to them, "How could this man have sinned before birth?" Instead of that, he replies, that, if this man is blind, it is not because he

has sinned, but that the glory of God may be shown in him; i.e., that he must be the instrument of a manifestation of the power of God. If it were not an expiation of the past, it was an experience which must have advanced him towards perfection; for God's laws are such, we have no suffering without compensation.

As to the means employed to cure him, it is evident that the clay formed of earth and saliva obtained its healing properties from the healing fluid with which it was impregnated. Thus the most simple agents — water, for example — can acquire powerful and effective qualities under the action of the spiritual or magnetic fluid, to which they serve as vehicle, or reservoir.

26. *The Numerous Cures performed by Jesus.* — ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. IV. — 23. And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.

24. And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatic, and those which had the palsy; and he healed them.

25. And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judæa, and from beyond Jordan.

27. Of all the acts which testify to the power of

Jesus, without doubt the cures he performed are the most numerous. He wished to prove by that that true power is that which does good ; that his object was to render himself useful, and not to satisfy indifferent curiosity by the performance of extraordinary things. By alleviating suffering, he touched the hearts of men, and made more proselytes than if he had alone gratified their curiosity. By this means he made himself beloved. Whilst, if he had limited himself to producing surprising material effects, as the Pharisees demanded of him, the greater part of the people would have seen in him only a sorcerer or skilful juggler with whom idlers had been amused. Thus, when John the Baptist sends to him his disciples to ascertain if he is the Christ, he does not say, "I am he ;" for every impostor could have been able to say as much. He does not tell them of the marvellous things he has accomplished, but simply replies, "Go say to John, The blind see, the lame walk, the deaf hear, and the gospel is preached to the poor." It was equivalent to saying, Recognize me in my works ; judge the tree by its fruit : for there is found the veritable character of the divine mission.

28. It is also by the good it does that Spiritism proves its divine mission. It cures physical evils, but, above all, moral maladies, which are the most important works by which it affirms itself. Its most sincere adepts are not only those who have been astonished by the sight of its extraordinary phenomena, but those who have been touched to the heart by the consolation it gives ; those who have been delivered from the tortures of doubt ; those

whose courage has been sustained by it in affliction, who have drawn strength from the certitude of the future which it has brought to them, with a knowledge of their spiritual being and destiny; those whose faith is unchangeable because they feel it and comprehend. Those who see in Spiritism only material effects cannot comprehend its moral power; as infidels, who know it only by its phenomena of which they do not admit its first cause (God), see in Spiritists only jugglers and charlatans. It is, then, not by the performance of wonderful works that Spiritism will triumph over infidelity: it is by multiplying its moral benefits. For, if they will not believe in the mighty works it accomplishes, they experience, like all the world, sufferings and afflictions, and no one refuses alleviation and consolation. (chap. XIV., No. 30.)

29. *Those possessed by an Evil Spirit.* — ST. MARK, CHAP. I. — 21. And they went into Capernaum; and straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the synagogue, and taught.

22. And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

23. And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit; and he cried out,

24. Saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.

25. And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26. And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.



27. And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.

30. ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. IX. — 32. As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil.

33. And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel.

34. But the Pharisees said, He casteth out devils through the prince of the devils.

31. ST. MARK, CHAP. IX. — 13. But I say unto you, That Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

14. And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them.

15. And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him saluted him.

16. And he asked the scribes, What question ye with them?

17. And one of the multitude answered and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit;

18. And wheresoever he taketh him, he teareth him; and he foameth, and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast him out; and they could not.

19. He answereth him, and saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

20. And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him; and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

21. And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child.

22. And ofttimes it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23. Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

24. And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

25. When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26. And the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him: and he was as one dead; insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27. But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up; and he arose.

28. And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?

32. ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XII. — 22. Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw.

23. And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the Son of David?

24. But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

25. And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand:

26. And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?

27. And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges.

28. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.

33. The deliverance of those possessed by evil spirits figure, with the cures, among the most numerous acts of Jesus. Among the facts of this nature there is one, he who is reported above in No. 30, where the proof of his obsession is not evident. It is probable that then, as now, they attributed to the influence of demons all maladies, of which the cause was unknown, principally to dumbness, epilepsy, and catalepsy. But there are some cases of it where the action of undeveloped spirits is very evident. They have with those to which we have been witness such a striking analogy, that one recognizes with them all the symptoms of this kind of affection. The proof of the participation of an occult intelligence in similar cases is from the fact that a number of radical cures have been made in some spiritual centres, solely by

the evocation and moralization of the spirit obsessors, without magnetism or medicine, and often in the absence and at a distance from the patient. The immense superiority of Christ gave to him such authority over imperfect spirits, then called demons, that it was sufficient for him to command them to retire; for they could not resist his will.

34. The narrative of the evil spirits having been sent into the herd of swine is contrary to all probability. An evil spirit is no less a human spirit still, though imperfect enough to do evil after death as he did it before; and it is contrary to the laws of nature that he can animate the body of an animal. One sees there the amplification of a real common fact of the times of ignorance and superstition, or perhaps an allegory to characterize the impure inclinations of certain spirits.

35. Obsession and possession by evil spirits seem to have been very common in Judæa in the time of Jesus, which gave him the opportunity. The undeveloped spirits had no doubt invaded this country, causing an epidemic of the disease (chap. XIV., No. 49). Without being epidemic, the obsession of individuals is extremely frequent, and presents itself under very varied aspects which a profound knowledge of Spiritism makes easily recognizable. The health of the individual is often very sadly affected by it, either by aggravating organic affections or causing them. Obsessions will some day be inevitably ranged among pathological causes requiring by their special nature special curative means. Spiritism, by making known the cause of the evil, opens a new way for the art of curing, and furnishes to sci-

ence the means of success where she fails only by a want of knowledge of the original cause of the evil ("Mediums' Book," chap. 23).

36. Jesus was accused by the Pharisees of exorcising demons by demons. The good even that he did was, according to them, the work of Satan, without reflecting that it would not be possible for Satan to drive out spirits of evil, or rather that power would be given them to do good when they were bent upon evil. This same doctrine is that which the Church upholds to-day against spiritual manifestations.<sup>1</sup>

#### RESURRECTIONS.

37. *Jairus' Daughter.*—ST. MARK, CHAP. V.—  
21. And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him; and he was nigh unto the sea.

22. And, behold, there cometh one of the rulers of

<sup>1</sup> All theologians are far from professing absolute opinions upon the subject of demons. Here is that of an ecclesiastic, the value of which the clergy would not know how to call into question. The following passage is found in *Conferences upon Religion*, by Monseigneur Freyssinous, Bishop of Hermopolis, Vol. II., p. 341, Paris, 1825: "If Jesus had employed evil spirits to cast out demons, the latter would then have been working to destroy their own empire, and Satan would have been employing power against himself. It is certain that a demon who would seek to destroy the reign of vice in order to establish that of virtue must be a strange demon. That is why Jesus replied to the absurd accusation of the Jews, 'If I perform mighty works in the name of the demon, his kingdom must then be divided against itself,'—an answer which admits of no reply." This is precisely the argument which the Spiritists oppose to those who attribute to the evil spirits the good counsels which they receive. The demon would act like a professional thief who would return all that which he had stolen, and would engage other thieves to become honest men.

the synagogue, Jairus by name; and when he saw him, he fell at his feet,

23. And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death: I pray thee, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed; and she shall live.

24. And Jesus went with him; and much people followed him, and thronged him.

25. And a certain woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years,

26. And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27. When she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched his garment.

28. For she said, "If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29. And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

30. And Jesus, immediately knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes?

31. And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

32. And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33. But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

34. And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35. While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogue's house certain which said, Thy daughter is dead; why troublest thou the Master any further?

36. As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe.

37. And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

38. And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39. And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

40. And they laughed him to scorn. But when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying.

41. And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi; which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee, arise.

42. And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was of the age of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment.

43. And he charged them straitly that no man should know it; and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

38. *Son of the Widow of Nain.*—ST. LUKE, CHAP. VII.—11. And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12. Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow : and much people of the city was with her.

13. And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not.

14. And he came and touched the bier : and they that bare him stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise.

15. And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he delivered him to his mother.

16. And there came a fear on all : and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us ; and, That God hath visited his people.

17. And this rumor of him went forth throughout all Judæa and throughout all the region round about.

39. The fact of the return to corporeal life of an individual really dead would be contrary to the laws of nature, and consequently miraculous. Now it is not necessary to go over this order of facts in order to explain the resurrections performed by Jesus. If among us the appearance of death sometimes deceives our most celebrated physicians, accidents of this nature must have been much more frequent in a country where no precaution in regard to it was taken, and where interments were immediate.<sup>1</sup> In all probability, in the two cases cited above, the disease was syncope or lethargy. Jesus himself tells it positively of the daughter. "The damsel," said he, "is not dead, but sleepeth." With the fluid-power which

<sup>1</sup> A proof of this custom is found in Acts v. 5, etc.



Jesus possessed, there is nothing surprising in the fact that the vivifying fluid, directed by a strong will, should have re-animated the benumbed senses; that he should have been able to recall the spirit to the body which it was ready to leave, as the perispiritual connection was not broken. For men of that time, who believed a person dead when he ceased to breathe, there were resurrections, and they have been able to affirm it in good faith; but they were in reality cures, and not resurrections in the true acceptance of the word.

40. The resurrection of Lazarus, whatever they may say, disaffirms nothing in regard to this principle. He was, they say, for four days in the sepulchre. But it is well known that some attacks of lethargy last eight days or more. They add that he smelt badly, which is a sign of decomposition. This allegation proves nothing more, as with some persons there is partial decomposition of the body before death, which is attended by a disagreeable odor. Death arrives only when the organs essential to life are attacked. And who could be able to know if a disagreeable odor attended him? It was his sister Martha who said it; but how did she know? Lazarus having been interred four days, she could suppose it, but have no certitude of it.<sup>1</sup>

41. *Jesus walks upon the Water.* — ST. MATTHEW,

<sup>1</sup> The following fact proves that decomposition sometimes precedes death: In the convent of Bon-Pasteur, founded at Toulon by the Abbot Marin, chaplain of the convict-prison for repentant females, was found a young woman who had endured the most terrible suffering with the calmness and impassibility of an expiatory victim. In the midst of the pain she seemed to smile, as if in a celestial vision. Like St. Theresa, she asked to suffer more. Her flesh was in shreds: the gangrene gained upon her limbs. By a wise foresight

CHAP. XIV. — 22. And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

23. And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone.

24. But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary.

25. And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea.

26. And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear.

27. But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.

28. And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

29. And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus.

30. But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me.

31. And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

32. And when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased.

the doctors recommended the interment of the body immediately after decease. Strange enough! hardly had she rendered the last sigh than all work of decomposition arrested itself, the death-like exhalations ceased, and during thirty-six hours she remained exposed to the prayers and veneration of the community.

33. Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

42. This phenomenon finds its natural explanation in the principles previously explained in chap. XIV., Nos. 35-37. Analogous examples prove that it is neither impossible nor miraculous, since it is in the laws of nature. It can be produced in two ways. Jesus, although living, appeared upon the water under a tangible form, whilst his body was elsewhere. This is the most probable hypothesis. One can even recognize in the recital certain characteristic signs of tangible apparitions (chap. XIV., Nos. 35-37). On the other hand, his body could have been sustained and weight neutralized by the same fluid-force which maintains a table in space without support. The same effect has many times been produced over human bodies.

43. *Transfiguration.* — ST. MARK, CHAP. IX. —

1. And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

2. And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into a high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them.

3. And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow; so as no fuller on earth can white them.

4. And there appeared unto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

5. And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6. For he wist not what to say; for they were sore afraid.

7. And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

8. And suddenly, when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

9. And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead.

44. The reason for this phenomenon can be found in the properties of this same peri-spiritual fluid. The transfiguration (explained chap. XIV., No. 39) is an ordinary circumstance enough, which, in consequence of fluid-radiation, can change the appearance of an individual; but the purity of the peri-spirit of Jesus has given to his spirit an exceptional brilliancy. As to the apparitions of Moses and Elias, they can be accounted for in the same way as similar ones (chap. XIV., Nos. 35 and following ones). Of all the faculties which have been revealed to us in Jesus, there is not one which is outside or beyond the conditions of humanity, and which one does not encounter in ordinary men, because they are gifts of nature; but, by the superiority of his moral essence and of his fluid qualities, they attained with him proportions

above that of the common. He represented to us, aside from his carnal envelope, the state of pure spirits.

45. *The Tempest stilled.* — ST. LUKE, CHAP. VIII. — 22. Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And they launched forth.

23. But as they sailed, he fell asleep: and there came down a storm of wind on the lake; and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardy.

24. And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.

25. And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid wondered, saying one to another, What manner of man is this! for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him.

46. We do not yet know enough of the secrets of nature to affirm if there are or not occult intelligences which preside at the action of the elements. In this hypothesis the phenomena in question would be the result of an act of authority over these same intelligences, and would prove a power which has not been given to any man to exercise. At all events, Jesus, sleeping quietly during the tempest, attests a security which can be explained by this fact, that his spirit saw there was no danger, and that the storm was going to be allayed.

47. *The Marriage at Cana. Turning of Water into Wine.* — This miracle, mentioned only in the

Gospel of St. John, is indicated as being the first that Jesus had performed: and under this title it ought to have been so much the more remarked upon; but it seems to have produced very little sensation, as no other evangelist mentions it. Such an extraordinary feat ought to have astonished the guests to the highest degree, and, above all, the host himself, who, it seems, had not even perceived it. Considered by itself, this fact has little importance comparatively with those which truly testify of the spiritual qualities of Jesus. By admitting that things have taken place as they are reported to have done, it is remarkable that it is the sole phenomenon of this kind which he has produced. He was of a nature too elevated to attach himself to purely material effects, calculated solely to pique the curiosity of the crowd, who would have confounded him with a magician. He knew that useful things would obtain him more sympathy, and obtain for his cause more converts than those which could pass for a juggler's tricks, and touch not the heart. However, the act may be clearly explained up to a certain point, to which fluid-action as well as magnetism offers some examples of having the power of changing the properties of water by giving it the taste of wine; but this hypothesis is not very probable, as in a case of this kind the water has not been of the color of wine, which could not have failed in being remarked. It is more rational to see in it one of those parables so frequent in the teachings of Jesus, like that of the "prodigal son," "the marriage feast," and many others. He made during the repast an allusion to the wine and water, whence he would have evoked

a moral. That which justifies this opinion are the words which have been spoken in regard to it by the ruler of the feast, — “Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine until now.”

48. *The Miracle of the Multiplication of Bread.* — This miracle of the bread is one of those which have puzzled commentators, and diverted the imagination of infidels. Without giving themselves the trouble to look for the allegorical sense of it, the latter have seen in it only a puerile history; but the greater number of serious men have seen in this recital, although under a form different from the ordinary one, a parable comparing the spiritual nourishment of the soul with the nourishment of the body. One can see in it, however, more than one metaphor, and admit at a certain point of view the reality of a material effect, without resorting to belief in the miracle of it. One knows that in great pre-occupation of mind, caused by giving undivided attention to a certain thing, hunger is forgotten. Now, those who followed Jesus were people greedy to hear him. There is nothing astonishing in the fact, that, having been fascinated by his words, and perhaps also by the powerful magnetic action which he exercised over them, they had not felt the need of eating. Jesus, who foresaw this result, has then been able to tranquillize his disciples by saying, in the figurative language which was habitual to him, that they had really brought some bread with them, and that this would satisfy the needs of the multitude. At the same time he gave to the latter a lesson: “Give ye

them to eat," said he. He taught them by that, that they also must nourish them by the word. Thus, beside the moral, allegorical sense, he has been able to produce a well-known, natural, psychological effect. The wonderful part in this case is the great power of his words, which have captivated the attention of an immense crowd to such a point as to make them forget the wants of the body. This moral power testifies the superiority of Jesus much more than the purely material fact of the multiplication of bread, which must have been considered as an allegory. This explanation is found confirmed by Jesus himself in St. Matthew, chap. xvi. 5-12, the leaven of the Pharisees.

49. *Bread from Heaven, or Manna.*—ST. JOHN, CHAP. VI.—22. The day following, when the people, which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone ;

23. Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks :

24. When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

25. And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither ?

26. Jesus answered them and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.



27. Labor not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you : for him hath God the Father sealed.

28. Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God ?

29. Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

30. They said therefore unto him, What sign showest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee ? what dost thou work ?

31. Our fathers did eat manna in the desert ; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

32. Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven ; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.

33. For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

34. Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

35. And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life : he that cometh to me shall never hunger ; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.

36. But I said unto you, that ye also have seen me, and believe not.

47. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.

48. I am that bread of life.

49. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.

50. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

50. In the first passage, Jesus, by recalling the effect previously produced, gives us clearly to understand that he was not acting with material bread: otherwise the comparison which he established with the leaven of the Pharisees had been without object. "Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? How is it that ye do not understand that I spake it not to you concerning bread, but that you should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees?" This reproach was given them for having had a material idea of the multiplication. The act had been extraordinary enough in itself to have struck the imagination of his disciples, who, however, appeared not to have remembered it. This idea is set forth no less clearly in the discourse of Jesus upon the bread from heaven, or manna, in which he tries to make them comprehend in the true sense the value of spiritual nourishment. "Work," said he, "not for the bread which perisheth, but for that which cometh down from heaven, which the Son of man will give you." This nourishment is his word, which is the bread descended from heaven, and which gives life to the world. "I am the bread of life," said he: "he who comes to me will hunger no more, and he who believes in me will never thirst." But these distinctions were too subtle for these rough natures, who could comprehend only tangible things. The manna

which had fed their ancestors was the true bread from heaven to them: there was the miracle. If, then, the act of producing bread had taken place materially, why should these same men, for whose profit it was produced a few days before, say to Jesus, "What sign showest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work?" It is evident they understood miracles to be the mighty works which the Pharisees demanded; i.e., signs from heaven as commanded with the wand of an enchanter. Those which Jesus did were too simple, and did not depart enough from the laws of nature. The cures even were not sufficiently extraordinary. The spiritual miracles were not material enough for them.

51. *Temptation of Jesus.*—Jesus transported by the Devil to the pinnacle of the temple, from thence to the summit of a mountain, and tempted by him, is one of these parables so common with him, which public credulity has transformed into material fact. The following explanation is taken from a teaching given by a spirit on this subject:—

"Jesus was not carried by an evil spirit, as above affirmed; but he wished to make men comprehend that humanity is subject to failure, and that it must always be on guard against the bad inspirations to which its weak nature is subjected. The temptation of Jesus is, then, a figure of speech, and one must be blind to take it literally. Why would you desire that the Messiah, the 'Word' of God incarnate, should be submitted for a time, however short, to the suggestions of the Devil; and that, as the evangelist Luke writes, the Devil had quitted him for a time, which would make one imagine that he would yet be sub-

mitted to his power? No: comprehend better the teachings which have been given you. The Spirit of Evil had no power over the Spirit of Good. No one has been said to have seen Jesus upon the temple or upon the mountain. Certainly, if it had been a fact, it would have been noised among the people. The temptation was then not a material one. As to the moral side of it, could you admit that the Spirit of Darkness could tempt him who knew his origin and power with the words, 'Adore me, and I will give you all the kingdoms of the earth'? The Devil in that case must have been ignorant of who he was to whom he made such offers, which is not probable. If he knew him, his proposition was nonsensical; for he must have well known that he would repel one who came to ruin his empire over men. Comprehend the sense of this parable; for it is one, as well as the 'prodigal son' and 'good Samaritan.'

"One shows us the dangers men run if they resist not this inmost voice, which constantly cries, 'Thou canst be more than thou art; thou canst possess more than thou possessest; thou canst grow great, increase, acquire. Listen to the voice of ambition, and all your wishes will be fulfilled.' It shows to you the danger and the means of evading it, by saying to the evil inspirations, 'Get thee behind me, Satan,' or, in other words, 'Go away from me, temptation.' The other two parables show what hope there is for him who, too feeble to cope with temptation, has succumbed to it. It shows you the father blessing the repentant child, and according to him with love the pardon implored. They show you that the guilty, the schismatic, the man who is re-

pelled by his brother, as being worth more in the eyes of the Supreme Judge than those who despise him because that he practises the virtues taught by the law of love. Weigh well the teachings given in the Gospels; learn to distinguish the proper sense from the figurative; and the errors which have blinded you so many centuries will, little by little, be effaced, in order to make place for the brilliant light of truth.”—Bordeaux, 1862: by St. John the Evangelist.

52. *Remarkable Phenomena at the Death of Jesus.*—ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXVII.—45. Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.

51. And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;

52. And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose,

53. And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

53. It is strange that such mighty works, being accomplished at the moment even when the attention of the city was fixed upon the anguish of Jesus, which was the event of the day, should not have been remarked upon. As no historian mentions it, it seems impossible that an earthquake and darkness for three hours over the face of the earth, in a country where the heavens are in a constant state of limpidness, should have passed unnoticed. The duration of this obscurity is about that of the eclipse of the

sun; but this kind of an eclipse is produced only with the new moon, and the death of Jesus took place during the full moon, the 14th of the month of *Nissan*, the passover of the Jews.

54. The obscuration of the sun may have been produced also by the spots which are observed upon its surfaces. In similar cases the brilliancy of the light is sensibly affected, but never to the point of producing obscurity and darkness. To suppose an obscuration of this kind took place at this epoch would be to assign to it a perfectly natural cause.<sup>1</sup>

55. *Appearances of Jesus after Death.* — ST. JOHN, CHAP. XX. — 14. And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

15. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to

<sup>1</sup> There are constantly on the surface of the sun fixed spots, which follow its rotary movement, and have served to determine the duration of it. But these spots sometimes increase in number, extent, and intensity, at which times a diminution in light and heat is produced. This augmentation in the number of spots appears to coincide with certain astronomical phenomena and the relative position of some planets, which occasions its periodical return. The duration of this obscuration is very variable. Sometimes it is only for two or three hours, but in 535 A.D. there was one which lasted fourteen months. As to the dead having been raised from their graves, perhaps some persons have seen apparitions, which is not exceptional; but, as then they knew not the cause of these phenomena, they imagined the individuals who appeared came out of their sepulchres. The disciples of Jesus, excited by the death of their master, have, without doubt, attached some particular facts to it, attention to which would not have been drawn at any other time. To men predisposed to the marvellous, a fragment of rock being detached at this time would have given them ample cause to say the rocks were mysteriously rent. Jesus is great by his works, but not in the fantastical pictures with which only an unenlightened enthusiasm must have surrounded him.

be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16. Jesus saith unto her Mary. She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17. Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.

18. Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

56. ST. LUKE, CHAP. XXIV.—13. And, behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs.

14. And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15. And it came to pass, that, while they communed together and reasoned, Jesus himself drew himself near, and went with them.

16. But their eyes were holden that they should not know him.

17. And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?

18. And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days?

19. And he said unto them, What things? And

they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people :

20. And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him.

21. But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel : and beside all this, to-day is the third day since these things were done.

22. Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre ;

23. And when they found not his body, they came, saying that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said he was alive.

24. And certain of them which were with us went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women had said : but him they saw not.

25. Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken :

26. Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory ?

27. And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself.

28. And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went : and he made as though he would have gone further.

29. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us ; for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them.

30. And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.



31. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him ; and he vanished out of their sight.

32. And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the Scriptures?

33. And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,

34. Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35. And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

36. And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

37. But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

38. And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

39. Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me and see ; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

40. And when he had thus spoken, he showed them his hands and his feet.

41. And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?

42. And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of a honeycomb.

43. And he took it, and did eat before them.

44. And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you,

that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms concerning me.

45. Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures,

46. And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day :

47. And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

48. And ye are witnesses of these things.

49. And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you : but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

57. ST. JOHN, CHAP. XX. — 20. And when he had so said, he showed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

21. Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you : as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22. And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost :

23. Whosoever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them ; and whosoever sins ye retain, they are retained.

24. But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.

25. The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails,

and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.

26. And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them : then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you.

27. Then said he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands ; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side ; and be not faithless, but believing.

28. And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God.

29. Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed : blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

58. ST. JOHN, CHAP. XXI.—1. After these things Jesus showed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias ; and on this wise showed he himself.

2. There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3. Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately ; and that night they caught nothing.

4. But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore ; but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

5. Then Jesus saith unto them, Children, have ye any meat ? They answered him, No.

6. And he said unto them, Cast the net on the

right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

7. Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fisher's coat unto him (for he was naked), and did cast himself into the sea.

8. And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits), dragging the net with fishes.

59. ST. LUKE, CHAP. XXIV.—50. And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.

51. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

52. And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy :

53. And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

60. The appearance of Jesus after death is reported by all the evangelists with circumstantial details, which will not allow us to doubt the reality of the fact. They are, besides, perfectly explained by the fluid laws and properties of the peri-spirit, and present nothing anomalous to the phenomena of the same kind of which ancient and contemporaneous history offers numerous examples, without excepting the tangibility of the form presented. If one observes the circumstances which have attended his diverse appearances, one recognizes in him at these moments

all the characters of a fluid being. He appeared and disappeared unexpectedly ; he was seen by some, and not by others, under a guise not recognized even by his disciples ; he appeared to them in closed rooms, where a carnal body could not have penetrated ; his language even has not the animation of a corporal being ; he has the tone which is brief and sententious, peculiar to spirits who manifest in this manner. His whole manner, in short, is not that of a denizen of the terrestrial sphere. The sight of him causes at the same time surprise and fear. His disciples, in seeing him, speak no more to him with the old freedom : they feel that he is a man no more. Jesus then showed his peri-spiritual body to them, which explains why he was seen only by those to whom he desired to make himself known. If he had worn his carnal body, he would have been seen by the first comer as in life. His disciples, being ignorant of the first cause of the phenomenon of apparitions, took no account of these peculiarities, which were not probably remarked. They saw Jesus, and touched him : for them it was the resurrected body (chap. XIV., Nos. 14 and 35-38).

61. Whilst the infidel rejects all facts accomplished by Jesus having a supernatural aspect, and considers them without exception as legends, Spiritism gives the greater part of them a natural explanation. It proves their possibility, not alone by the theory of the fluid laws, but by their identity with analogous facts produced by a multitude of persons in the most common conditions. Since these facts are in some respects public property, they prove nothing,

in principle, touching the exceptional nature of Jesus.<sup>1</sup>

62. The greatest miracle Jesus has performed — that which truly attests his superiority — is the revolution his teachings have made in the world, notwithstanding his limited field of action. Jesus was indeed poor, obscure, born in a most humble condition among a despised people, very ignorant, and without political, artistic, or literary influence. He preached only three years. During this time, so short in duration, he was despised and persecuted by his fellow-citizens, calumniated and treated as an impostor; he was often obliged to flee, in order to escape stoning; he was betrayed by one of his own apostles, denied by another, and forsaken by all at the moment when he fell into the hands of his enemies. He did only good; but that did not shelter him from malevolence, which turned against him even the blessings which he bestowed. Condemned to the death reserved for criminals, he died ignored by the world; for contemporary history is silent in regard to him.<sup>2</sup>

63. He has written nothing himself, however. Aided by some obscure men like himself, his words

<sup>1</sup> The numerous contemporaneous facts of cures, apparitions, possessions, second sight, etc., which are related in the *Revue Spirite*, and recalled in the above notes, offer, even to circumstances of detail, such a striking analogy to those which the evangelist reports, that their similarity in cause and effect are evident. One naturally asks why the natural cause of to-day should be a supernatural one in another epoch of the world's history, — diabolical with some, and divine with others. If it had been possible to have compared the two together here at greater length, the comparison would have been easier; but their number, and the elaborate explanations which the greater part necessitate, have not permitted of it.

<sup>2</sup> The Jewish historian, Josephus, is the only one who speaks of him, and he writes very little in respect to him.

have been sufficient to regenerate the world. His doctrine has killed all-powerful paganism, and has become the torch of civilization. He had against him all that can possibly foil men in an earthly career. This is the reason why we say that the triumph of his doctrine is the greatest of his miracles: at the same time, it proves his divine mission. If, in place of social and regenerative principles, founded upon the spiritual future of man, he had offered to posterity only a few marvellous facts, scarcely would his name be mentioned to-day.

64. *Disappearance of the Body of Jesus.* — The disappearance of the body of Jesus after his death has been the subject of many controversies. It has been attested by the four evangelists, upon the evidence of the women who presented themselves at the sepulchre the third day, and did not find him there. Some have seen in this disappearance a miraculous occurrence; while others have supposed a clandestine removal to have taken place. According to another opinion, Jesus could not ever have been invested with a common carnal body, but only with a fluid one; that he could have been during his whole life only partly tangible, — in a word, a sort of agénère. His birth, judged from this stand-point, his death, and all the acts of his life must have been only appearances. Thus they say his body returned to the fluid state, and was able to disappear from the sepulchre; and with this same body he appeared to friends after death. Without doubt, a similar fact is not radically impossible, after that which one knows to-day of the properties of fluids; but it would be at least entirely exceptional, and in formidable opposi-

tion to the usual character of the agénères (chap. XIV., No. 36).

65. The question then is, if such a hypothesis is admissible, if it is confirmed or contradicted by facts. There are two periods in the sojourn of Jesus upon the earth, — that which preceded, and that which followed, his death. In the first, from the moment of conception till birth, all things natural to the mother took place, as in ordinary conditions of life.<sup>1</sup> From his birth till death, in all his acts, language, and the diverse circumstances of his life, there are presented unmistakable evidences of corporeity. The phenomena of the psychic order which were produced through him were only occasional, and were not anomalous, since they are explained by the properties of the peri-spirit, and are developed in different degrees of power in other individuals. After his death to the contrary, he is revealed to us as a fluid being. The difference between the two states is so distinctly defined, that it is not possible to assimilate them. Properly speaking, the carnal body has the inherent properties of matter, which differ essentially from those of the ethereal fluids. Disintegration is brought about by rupture of molecular cohesion. A sharp instrument by cutting into the material body divides its tissues. If the essential organs of life are attacked, the exercise of the functions is arrested, and death ensues; that is to say, the death of the body. This cohesion, existing not in the fluid body, life reposes not on the play of special organs, and cannot be affected by analogous disorders. A sharp

<sup>1</sup> We do not speak here of the mystery of the incarnation, which will subsequently be examined.



instrument, or any other, penetrates it, as it would vapor, without occasioning any harm. This is the reason why this kind of body can never die, and why fluid beings, designated by the name of *agénères*, can never be killed.

After the crucifixion of Jesus, his body remained inert and without life. It was buried like an ordinary corpse ; and all could see him and touch him. After his resurrection, when he desires to quit the earth, he does not die. He is raised, he vanished, disappeared, without leaving any trace behind, — an evident proof that this body was of another nature than that which perished upon the cross : whence it is necessary to conclude, that, if Jesus died, he had a carnal body. In consequence of its material properties, the carnal body is the seat of the sensations and physical pains which are echoed in the sensitive centre, or spirit. It is not the body which suffers : it is the spirit which receives the rebound of the injury or hurts to the organic tissues. A body deprived of spirit sensation feels absolutely no sensation ; while the spirit, which has no material body, cannot experience sufferings which are the result of injury to matter : whence it is necessary to conclude, that if Jesus suffered materially, as one cannot doubt, it was because he had a material body in nature similar to our own.

66. To the material facts many powerful moral considerations must be added. If Jesus had been, during his life, in the condition of fluid beings, he would have experienced neither pain nor any of the wants of the material body. To suppose him to have been thus is to take away from him all the

merit of a life of suffering and privation, which he chose as an example of resignation. If all this in him was only appearance, all the acts of his life — the reiterated announcement of his death, the sad scene in the garden of Gethsemane, his prayer to God to let, if possible, the cup pass from his lips, his passion, his agony, all, even to his last sigh at the moment of rendering up the spirit — would only be a vain show, a mockery of nature, making an illusory sacrifice of his life appear real. Such would be a comedy unworthy of a simple, honest man, and one much more unworthy of so superior a being; in short, it would have been the abuse of the good faith of his contemporaries and of posterity. Such are the logical sequences of this system of belief, sequences which are not admissible; for it lowers it morally instead of elevating it. Jesus must then have had, like everybody else, a carnal and a spiritual body, which the material and psychic phenomena of his life attest.

67. What has become of his carnal body? This is a problem of which the solution cannot be deduced, either by the new order of belief or by hypotheses, in default of sufficient elements to seat a conviction.

This solution, besides, is of secondary importance, and would add nothing to the merits of Christ, or to the facts which attest, in a very peremptory manner, his superiority and divine mission. There can then be only personal opinions in regard to the disposition of his body, which would have no value only as they should be sanctioned by logic and by the general teachings of spirits. Now, until the present

time, none of the opinions which have been formulated have received the sanction of this double control. If the spirits have not yet reached the question in the unanimity of their teaching, without doubt the moment of solving it has not yet come; or the requisite knowledge, by the aid of which they can solve it, is wanting. In the mean time, if one discards the supposition of a secret carrying away of it, one could find, by analogy, a probable explanation in the theory of spiritualizing matter, thereby making it invisible to the carnal eye; examples of which can be found in the "Book on Mediums," chaps. 4 and 5.

68. This idea upon the nature of the body of Jesus is not new. In the fourth century Apollinarius of Laodicea, chief of the sect of the Apollinarists, pretended that Jesus had not taken a body like ours, but one incapable of harm or pain, which had descended from heaven on the breast of the Virgin Saint, and was not born of her; that thus Jesus had been born, had suffered, and was dead only in appearance. The Apollinarists were anathematized at the Council of Alexandria in 360, in that of Rome in 374, and in that of Constantinople in 381.

## CHAPTER XVI.

### PROPHECIES IN THE LIGHT OF SPIRITISM.

1. *Theory of Fore-Knowledge.* — How is it possible to obtain a knowledge of the future? One comprehends how to predict events which are a consequence of the present state of things, but not of those which have no connection with this, and still less of which are attributed to chance. Future things, they say, do not exist. They are still in nothingness. How then can one know that they will come? The examples of verified predictions are, however, numerous enough, from whence it is necessary to conclude it is a phenomenon of which we have not the key; for there is no effect without a cause. It is this cause we are seeking; and it is Spiritism, the key to so many mysteries, which will furnish it to us. Moreover, we will show that the fact of the predictions themselves is not obtained by a departure from the natural laws. Let us take, as a comparison, an example in common things, which will aid us to make the principle which we have to develop better understood.

2. Let us suppose a man placed upon a high mountain, and considering the vast extent of the plain. In this situation the distance of a league, or three miles, will be a very short distance seemingly, and he will

easily embrace with a glance of the eye all the undulations of the earth from the commencement to the end of the route. The traveller who follows this route for the first time knows that by marching he will arrive at the end. There is a simple foreknowledge of the consequence of his march; but the unevenness of the route, the ascents and descents, the rivers to cross, the woods to traverse, the precipices from which he may fall, the places where thieves may be stationed to waylay him, the inns where he will be able to repose,—all this is independent of his personal knowledge. It is for him the unknown, the future, because his sight extends not beyond the little circle which surrounds him. As to the continuance of it, he measures it by the time that it takes him to go from one point to another of the route. Take away from him the knowledge of the data of the route, and his knowledge of its continuance is effaced. For the man who is on the mountain, and who follows with the eye the traveller, all this is the present. Let us suppose that he comes down, and says to the traveller, “At such a moment you will encounter such a thing: you will be attacked and delivered.” He will predict the future to him; for it is the future to the pedestrian, but the present to the man of the mountain.

3. If we depart now from the circle of things purely material, and if we enter by thought into the domain of spiritual life, we will see this phenomenon produced upon a grander scale. The dematerialized spirits are like the man of the mountain. Space and duration of time are to them no more; but the extent and penetration of their sight are

proportionated, or in proportion to their purification and to their elevation in the spiritual hierarchy. They are in connection with inferior spirits, like the man armed with a powerful telescope beside him who has only his eyes to see with. With the latter their view is circumscribed, not only because it can only with difficulty go far away from the globe to which they are attached, but because the coarseness of their peri-spirit veils distant things, as the fog does for the eyes of the body. One understands then that, according to the degree of perfection to which a spirit has attained, it can foretell the events of a period of a few years, of a few centuries, and even of many thousands of years; for what is a century in the presence of infinitude?

The events do not successively unroll themselves like the incidents on the route of the traveller. He sees simultaneously the commencement and the end of the period. All the events, which in this period are the future for the man of the earth, are for him the present. He will be able to tell us with certitude such a thing will happen at this epoch, because that he sees this thing, as the man of the mountain sees that which awaits the traveller on his route. If he does not inform him of it, it is because that a knowledge of the future would be hurtful to the man; it might trammel his free will; it might paralyze him in the work which he must accomplish for his progress. The good and the evil which await him, being unknown to him, are the trial for him. If such a faculty, even in a limited state, can be one of the attributes of the creature, to what a degree of power must it not be elevated in the Creator, who embraces

infinitude? For him time does not exist: the commencement and the end of worlds are the present. In this immense panorama, what is the duration of the life of a man, of a generation, of a people?

4. However, as man must concur in the general progress, and as certain events must result from his co-operation, he can be useful in certain cases if he has a knowledge of these events, in order that he may prepare the way for them, and hold himself ready to act when the right moment comes. That is the reason God permits sometimes a corner of the veil to be lifted; but it is always for a useful object, and never to satisfy a vain curiosity. This mission can then be given not to all spirits; for there are some who know the future no better than men, but to some spirits sufficiently advanced for that. Now, it is well to observe that this kind of revelation is always made spontaneously, and never, or very rarely at least, in response to a direct demand. This mission can equally devolve upon certain men in this manner: he to whom is confided the care of revealing a concealed fact can receive, in his ignorance, the inspiration of the spirits who know it, and then he transmits it mechanically, without rendering an account of them to himself.

5. It is known besides that either during sleep, in a waking state, or in the ecstasies of second sight, the soul leaves the body, and is possessed in a greater or less degree with the faculties of the freed spirit. If he is an advanced spirit, if he has, above all, like the prophets, received a special mission for this effect, he enjoys, in the moments of the emancipation of the soul, the faculty of em-

bracing by himself a greater or less extent of time, and sees as present the events of this period. He can then reveal them at the same instant, or preserve the memory of them for his awakening. If these events must remain a secret, he will lose the remembrance of them, or there will remain with him only a vague intuition of them sufficient to guide him. Thus is this faculty seen developed on providential occasions, in imminent dangers, in great calamities, in revolutions; and the greater number of sects which have been persecuted have had numbers of prophets. Thus inspired by these visions, great captains are seen resolutely marching towards the enemy with a certitude of victory, that men of genius, like Christopher Columbus, for example, have pursued an object, predicting the moment when they will attain it. The reason for this is, they have seen this object accomplished in prophetic vision. The gift of prophecy is then no more supernatural than a multitude of other phenomena. It is based upon the properties of the soul, and the law of connection between the spiritual and material worlds, which Spiritism has come to explain. But how can one admit the existence of an invisible world if one believes not in the reality of the soul, or if one doubts its individuality after death? The infidel who denies pre-science is consistent with himself: it remains to be known if he himself is consistent with the law of nature.

6. This theory of foresight does not solve, perhaps, in an absolutely correct manner, all cases which can be presented as revelations of the future; but one cannot deny that it is based on a truly fundamen-



tal principle. If it cannot all be explained, it is through the difficulty which man has in placing himself at this point outside the earth; by his inferiority even his ideas constantly leading him into the path of material life, rendering him often impotent to detach himself from the earth. In this respect certain men are like young birds, the wings of which are too feeble to permit them to fly, or like those whose sight is too short to see into distance, or like those who are wanting in the sense of certain perceptions.

7. In order to comprehend spiritual things, — that is to say, to form as distinct an idea as that we make of a landscape before our eyes, — there truly fails us a sense, exactly as the necessary sense is wanting to the blind man to comprehend the effects of light, of colors, and of sight, without contact with them. Thus it is only by an effort of the imagination we attain to it, and by the aid of comparisons drawn from familiar things.

8. But some material things can give only very imperfect ideas of spiritual ones. On this account it is best not to take the comparisons which have been drawn too literally, and believe, for example, that the spirit is held at such an elevation as has been stated in one comparison, or that they are obliged to be upon mountains, or above the clouds, in order to see into time and space. This faculty is inherent to a state of the materialization; that is to say, that spiritualization produces an effect which can be compared, though very imperfectly, with that view of the whole which a man has on the mountain-top. The object of this comparison was simply to show that some events, which are in the future to some, are in

the present for others, and thus can be predicted, which does not imply that the effect is produced in the same manner. In order to enjoy this perception it is not necessary that the spirit should transport himself to any point in space whatever. He who is on earth at our side can possess it in its plenitude as well as if he were a thousand miles away, although we see nothing beyond the horizon of our material vision. Light, with spirits, not being produced in the same manner or with the same elements as with man, their visual horizon is entirely different: this is something of which we have not the sense to conceive. The spirit beside the incarnated one is like a person with good eyes beside a blind man.

9. It is also necessary to figure to one's self that this perception is not limited by extent of space, but that it comprehends penetration in all things. It is, we repeat, an inherent faculty proportioned to the state of dematerialization.

This faculty is weakened by incarnation, but not completely deadened, because the soul has not been enclosed in the body as in a box. The incarnated being possesses it, although in a less degree than when free from matter: it is this which gives to some men a penetrating power, which is totally wanting in others, greater justice in a moral point of view, and a quicker comprehension of things beyond the material world. Not only the mind perceives, but it remembers, that which it has seen in a spiritual state; and this remembrance is like a picture traced on its thoughts. In incarnation it sees but vaguely, as through a veil; in a liberated state, it sees and conceives clearly. *The principle of sight is not*

*outside itself, but within it*: thus there is no need of our exterior light. By moral development the circle of our ideas and conception is enlarged. By the gradual dematerialization of the peri-spirit the latter is purified of the coarse elements which affect the delicacy of the perceptions, whence it is easy to comprehend that the extension of all the faculties follow spiritual progress.

10. It is the degree of extension of the spiritual faculties which, in incarnation, render it more or less apt to conceive of spiritual things. At the same time this aptitude is not the necessary consequence of the development of intelligence. Common science does not give it. Thus we see men of great learning as blind in spiritual things, as others are in material ones: they are stubborn in regard to spiritual things, because they do not understand them. The reason for which is, their progress in this respect is not yet accomplished; whilst one sees persons of an inferior intelligence and knowledge grasp them with the greatest facility, which proves that the latter have obtained the necessary preliminary intuition of it. It is with them a retrospective remembrance of that which they have seen and known, either as a wandering spirit, or in their anterior existences, as others have the intuition of languages and sciences which they have possessed. The faculty of changing its point of view and gathering knowledge from on high is not alone the solution of the problem of prophecy. Beside all this, it is the key to all faith which is true and solid; it is also the most powerful element of force and resignation: for, from the far-distant point to which it takes us, terrestrial life appearing like a

point in immensity, one comprehends of how little value things are which, seen from below, appear so important. The incidents, miseries, and vanities of life decrease in value by measure, as the immense and splendid horizon of the future unrolls itself before one. He who can look at the vicissitudes of life at this point of view is as happy as one can be here below.

11. It is well, then, to pity those who concentrate their thoughts upon this narrow, terrestrial sphere, because that they feel, in all its force, the consequence of all tribulations which, like so many serpents, sting them constantly. As to the future of Spiritism, the spirits are unanimous in affirming the near triumph of it, notwithstanding the opposition it receives. This foresight comes easy to them, firstly, because that its propagation is their own personal work. Concurring in the movement or directing it, they know, consequently, what they must do. Secondly, it is sufficient for them to know that it is within a short time, and in this period they see upon the way the powerful auxiliaries which God raises up for them, and which will not be tardy in manifesting themselves. Without being disembodied spirits, let the Spiritists carry themselves by thought thirty years in advance of this time to the middle age of the generation which is now being educated by it; let them from that point consider what is taking place to-day; follow this main spring of action, and they will see those who think they are called to overturn it worn out in their vain endeavors. They will see them gradually disappear from the scene, while this tree, constantly increasing in magnitude, will take deeper root each day.

12. The common events of private life are nearly always governed by the different traits of character manifested by each individual. Some will succeed according to his capacities, his knowledge of things, his energy and perseverance, while another will fail by a want of these traits; while we can truly say that each one is the "architect of his own fortune," which is never submitted to a blind fatality independent of his personal supervision. Knowing the character of an individual, one can easily predict for him his future.

13. The events which touch upon the general interests of humanity are regulated by Providence. When God designs a thing to be accomplished, it will be done in one way or another. Men concur in its execution; but no one is indispensable to it: otherwise God himself would be at the mercy of his creatures. If he to whom the mission is intrusted fails to execute it, another is intrusted with the charge of it. There is not an unaccomplished mission. Man is always free to fulfil that which has been confided to him, and which he has voluntarily accepted. If he does not perform it, he loses its reward, and he assumes the responsibility of delays, which can be caused by his negligence or bad desire. If he becomes an obstacle to its accomplishment, God can cast him down with a breath.

14. The final result of an event can then be certain, because that it is in the designs of God; but, as most frequently the details and mode of execution are subordinate to circumstances and to the free will of men, the ways and means of doing it can be uncertain. The spirits can give us a general idea of its

future accomplishment, if it is necessary that we be foretold of it; but in order to particularize in regard to it, giving date and place, a knowledge in advance of the energy of such and such individuals would be necessary. Now, if this determination is not yet in his mind, according to that which it will be, it can hasten or retard the announcement, thereby changing the secondary means of action, but all ending in the same result. Thus spirits can, judging from existing circumstances, predict that a war is more or less near, that it is inevitable, without being able to predict the day when it will commence, nor the detailed incidents which can be changed by the will of men.

15. In order to fix a time for future events, it is necessary also to take account of a circumstance inherent to the nature even of spirits. With them time, as well as space, cannot be estimated only by aid of points of comparison or data which divides it into periods which they can count.

Upon the earth the natural division of time into days and years is marked by the rising and setting of the sun, and by the duration of the movement of translation of the earth. The subdivision of days into twenty-four hours each is arbitrary. It is indicated by the aid of special instruments, such as the hour-glasses, the clepsydra, clocks, sun-dials, etc. The united measure of time must vary according to worlds, since the astronomical periods are different. Thus, for example, in Jupiter one day is equivalent to ten of our hours, and one year to nearly twelve of our years. There is, then, in each world a manifest difference in computing time according to the nature of the astral revolutions which take place in it. This would

make it difficult for a spirit unacquainted with our earth to give dates. But outside of worlds these means of distinguishing time do not exist. For a spirit in space, there is for him no rising or setting of the sun marking the days, nor a periodic revolution marking the years. There is for him only duration of time and infinite space (chap. VI., No. 1 and following).

He, then, who had never come to the earth could have no knowledge of our calculations, which besides would be useless to him. Moreover, he who had never been incarnated upon any world would have no notion of the fractions of duration of time. When a stranger spirit comes to this earth to manifest, he cannot assign dates to events only by identifying himself with our usages, which is without doubt in his power, but that which the most frequently he judges useless to do. However, the spirits which form the invisible population of our globe, where they have already lived, and still continue to remain in our midst, are naturally identified with our habits, of which they retain the remembrance in their free, wandering state. They have, then, less difficulty than the others in placing themselves at our point of view in regard to that which concerns terrestrial usages. In Greece they counted by olympiads, also by lunar or solar periods, according to time and place.

16. They would therefore more easily assign a date to future events if they knew it; but, beyond that, it is not always allowed them to give data. They are hindered by this reason, that every time circumstances of detail are subordinate to the free will and

eventual decision of man. The precise date really exists only when the event is accomplished. For this reason circumstantial predictions cannot be offered as certitudes, and must be accepted only as probabilities. Then, even, they will carry with them a seal of justifiable suspicion.

For this reason the truly wise spirits never give a fixed date to any event. They are limited to predict to us the issue of things which it is useful for us to know. To insist upon having fixed dates to events, is to expose ourselves to the mystifications of inferior spirits, who predict what they wish without concerning themselves about the truth of it, and amuse themselves with the frights and deceptions they cause. The most probable predictions are those which have a character of general and humanitarian utility. One can count upon others only when they are accomplished. One can, according to circumstances, accept them as a warning; but it would be imprudent to act prematurely in view of their realization at a fixed day. One can be certain that, the more circumstantial they are, the more suspicious one must be of them.

17. The form generally enough employed till now for predictions makes of them veritable enigmas, often undecipherable. This mysterious and cabalistic form, of which Nostradamus offers the most complete type, gives to them a certain prestige to the common eye, who attribute so much the more value as they are the more incomprehensible. By their ambiguity they lend themselves to very different interpretations, in such a way that, according to the sense attributed to certain allegorical words or those



of convention, the manner of computing the calculation, oddly complicated with dates, with a little patience one finds there nearly all that one desires. Whatever it may be, one cannot deny that some are of a serious character, and are confounded by their truth. It is probable that this veiled form has had some time its use, and even its necessity. To-day circumstances are no more the same: the positivism of the century would not accommodate itself to Sibylline language.

Thus the predictions of our day affect no more these strange forms. Those which the spirits give have nothing mystical about them. They speak in common language, as they did when living, because they have not ceased to belong to humanity. They predict to us future things, personal or general, as this can be useful to us, according to the clear-sightedness with which they are endowed, as counsellors or friends would do. Their predictions are, then, rather warnings, which take nothing away from the free will, than predictions which, properly speaking, would imply an absolute fatality. There is nearly always also a motive assigned for their opinion, because they do not wish to annihilate man's reason under a blind faith which permits them to appreciate the justice of it.

18. Contemporaneous humanity has also its prophets. More than one writer, poet, *littérateur*, historian, and philosopher has predicted in his writings the future march of things which is realized around us to-day. This aptitude comes often, without doubt, from a rectitude of judgment which deduces logical consequences from the present; but often, also, it is

the result of a special unconscious clairvoyance, or of a strange inspiration. That which these men have done in life, they can for a much stronger reason do, and with more exactitude, in the spiritual state, when the spiritual sight is no more obscured by matter.

## CHAPTER XVII.

PREDICTIONS OF THE GOSPELS.—NO ONE IS A PROPHET IN HIS OWN COUNTRY.—DEATH AND PASSION OF JESUS.—PERSECUTION OF THE APOSTLES.—IMPENITENT CITIES.—RUIN OF THE TEMPLE AND OF JERUSALEM.—MALEDICTIONS ON THE PHARISEES.—“MY WORDS WILL NOT PASS AWAY.”—THE CORNERSTONE.—PARABLE OF THE VINE-DRESSERS WHO WERE HOMICIDES.—“ONE FLOCK AND ONE SHEPHERD.”—COMING OF ELIAS.—ANNOUNCEMENT OF THE COMFORTER.—SECOND COMING OF CHRIST.—SIGNS FORETOLD.—“YOUR SONS AND YOUR DAUGHTERS SHALL PROPHECY.”—LAST JUDGMENT.

1. *No One is a Prophet in his own Country.*—ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XIII.—54. And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?

55. Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?

56. And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this man all these things?

57. And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honor, save in his own country, and in his own house.

58. And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief.

2. Jesus announced there a truth which has passed into a proverb, which, from the beginning of time, has been true as now, and to which one can still add, "that no one is a prophet during life." In the present acceptation of this maxim, it is understood to be the credit which a man enjoys among his own people, and among those in whose midst he lives, by the confidence in his superior knowledge and intelligence with which he inspires them. If there are some exceptions, they are rare; and in all cases they are never absolute. The principle of this truth is a natural consequence of human weakness, and can be explained thus: the habit of seeing them from infancy up, in the common circumstances of life, establishes between men a sort of material equality which makes one often refuse to recognize a moral superiority in him of whom one has been the companion and comrade, who has sprung from the same place, and of whom one has seen the first weaknesses. Pride suffers from the superiority which one is obliged to submit to.

Whoever is educated above the common level is always a butt for jealousy and envy. Those who feel themselves unable to attain to his height must perforce try to lower him by slander and calumny. They cry out against him so much the louder as they see themselves inferior to him, believing by so doing to aggrandize themselves, and eclipse him, by the noise they make. Such has been, and such will be, the history of humanity as long as men will not comprehend their spiritual nature, and will not enlarge their moral horizon. This is also a prejudice characteristic of narrow-minded and common spirits, who

yield to all this in their selfishness. On the other hand, they make generally of men whom they do not know personally, only by their mind, an ideal which increases by distance, time, and place. They nearly despoil them of humanity. It seems to them that they must not speak or feel like the rest of the world, that their language and thoughts must constantly be at the height of sublimity, without thinking that the mind cannot be incessantly strained and in a perpetual state of excitability. In the daily contact of private life they see too many men who live for the greater part on the material plane, in whom is nothing to distinguish them from the common herd. The man who lives on the material plane, who impresses the senses, eclipses nearly always the spiritual one, who interests the mind. From afar one only sees the lightnings of genius; nearer, they see the mind at rest. After death, the comparison existing no more, the spiritual part of man alone is left; and he appears so much the grander as the remembrance of the corporal man has been put farther away. That is the reason why men, who have marked their passage upon the earth by works of real value, have been better appreciated after death than in life. They have been judged with more impartiality, because, the envious and jealous having disappeared, personal antagonisms exist no more.

Posterity is a disinterested judge, which appreciates the work of the spirit, — accepts it without blind enthusiasm if it is good, rejects it without hatred if it is bad. A separation from the individuality who has produced it has taken place. Jesus suffered the more from the consequences of this principle,

inherent in human nature, because he lived among people who were very unenlightened, and among men who lived wholly upon the material plane. His compatriots saw in him only the son of the carpenter, the brother of men as ignorant as themselves; and they demanded why he could be superior to them, and where he obtained the right to censure them. Therefore, seeing his words had less power over his own people, who despised him, than over strangers, he went to preach among those who would listen to him, and give him that sympathy which he needed. One can judge somewhat of the feelings which his relatives entertained of his actions by reading the account where his mother, accompanied by his brothers, came into an assembly where he was, and tried to induce him to go home with them, accusing him of being deranged in mind (St. Mark, chap. iii., vers. 20, 21, and 31-35; "Gospel according to Spiritism," chap. 14). Thus on one side priests and Pharisees accused Jesus of being influenced by evil spirits, and on the other he was accused of insanity by his nearest relatives. Is this not the same treatment that Spiritists receive in our day? and must they complain if they are not better treated by their fellow-citizens than Jesus was? That which was not astonishing among an ignorant people two thousand years ago is more so now in this nineteenth century of a more advanced civilization.

3. *Death and Passion of Jesus.* — ST. LUKE, CHAP. IX. (After the cure of the lunatic.) — 44. Let these sayings sink down into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men.

45. But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they feared to ask him of that saying.

4. ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XVI. — 21. From that time forth began Jesus to show unto his disciples, how that he must go into Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

5. ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XVII. — 21. Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.

22. And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men.

6. ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XX. — 17. And Jesus going up to Jerusalem took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them,

18. Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death,

19. And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify him: and the third day he shall rise again.

7. ST. LUKE, CHAP. XVIII. — 31. Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished.

32. For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles,

and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on :

33. And they shall scourge him, and put him to death; and the third day he shall rise again.

34. And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

8. ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXVI.—1. And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

2. Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

3. Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas,

4. And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him.

5. But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people.

9. ST. LUKE, CHAP. XIII.—31. The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee.

32. And he said unto them, Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

10. *Persecution of the Apostles.*—ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. X.—17. But beware of men: for they will



deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues ;

18. And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

11. ST. JOHN, CHAP. XVI. — 1. These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended.

2. They shall put you out of the synagogues ; yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service.

3. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.

4. But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

12. ST. LUKE, CHAP. XXI. — 16. And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends ; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.

17. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake.

18. But there shall not an hair of your head perish.

19. In your patience possess ye your souls.

13. *Martyrdom of St. Peter.* — ST. JOHN, CHAP. XXI. — 18. Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest : but when thou shalt be old,

thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

19. This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.

14. *Impenitent Cities.*—ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XI.—20. Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not :

21. Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

22. But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you.

23. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which had been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.

24. But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.

15. *Ruin of the Temple and of Jerusalem.*—ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXIV.—1. And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to show him the buildings of the temple.

2. And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these

things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

16. ST. LUKE, CHAP. XIX. — 41. And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,

42. Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

43. For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side,

44. And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

17. ST. LUKE, CHAP. XIII. — 33. Nevertheless, I must walk to-day, and to-morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

34. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not!

35. Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

18. ST. LUKE, CHAP. XXI. — 20. And when ye

shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

21. Then let them which are in Judæa flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto.

22. For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

23. But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people.

24. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

19. *Jesus going to his Crucifixion.*—ST. LUKE, CHAP. XXIII.—27. And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

28. But Jesus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children.

29. For, behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.

30. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us.

31. For if they do these things in the green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

20. The faculty of foretelling the future is one of

the attributes of the soul, and is explained by the theory of foresight or prophecy. Jesus possessed it, like all the other gifts of the soul, to an eminent degree. He has then been able to foretell the events which would follow his death, without in this act doing any thing supernatural, since we have instances of it in the most common conditions of life. Rarely individuals announce with precision the moment of their death, because their soul, for the time emancipated from the body, is like the man of the mountain (chap. XVI., No. 1): it can see the road passed over, and the end.

21. It must have been thus with Jesus, who, being conscious of the mission which he came to fulfil, knew that a violent death was the necessary consequence of it. Spiritual sight, which was permanent with him, as well as power to read thought, must have shown him the circumstances and fatal time. For the same reason he could foretell the ruin of the Temple, that of Jerusalem, the misfortunes which would overtake its inhabitants, and the dispersion of the Jews, which admits not of a spiritual life independent of matter, can render no account of foresight that is the reason for denying it, attributing to chance the authentic facts which are accomplished under its eyes. It is remarkable that it recoils before the examination of all psychic phenomena which are produced on all sides for fear, no doubt, of seeing there the soul spring forth, and contradict their doctrine.

22. *Denunciation of the Pharisees.* — ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. III. — 7. But when he saw many of the Phari-

sees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8. Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance:

9. And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

10. And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

23. ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXIII. — 13. But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.

14. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.

15. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.

16. Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor!

17. Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18. And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is

nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty.

19. Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

20. Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21. And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22. And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

23. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

24. Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

25. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess.

26. Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

27. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness.

28. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

29. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypo-

crites ! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

30. And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

31. Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

32. Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

33. Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell ?

34. Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes : and some of them ye shall kill and crucify ; and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city :

35. That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.

36. Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

24. *My Words will not pass away.* — ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XV. — 12. Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended, after they heard this saying ?

13. But he answered and said, Every plant, which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

14. Let them alone : they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.



25. ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXIV.—35. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

26. The words of Jesus will not pass away, because they will be true always. His moral code will be eternal, because that it contains conditions of well-doing which conduct man to his eternal destiny. But have his words been studied over, and purified of all alloy and false interpretations? Have all the Christian sects seized the spirit of them? Has no one misconstrued the true sense of them in consequence of prejudices and ignorance of the laws of nature? Has no one made them an instrument of power to serve ambition and material interests, a stepping-stone, not for elevation to heaven, but for earthly elevation? Have they not all been given for a guide to the practice of the virtues which are made the express conditions upon which salvation depends? Are they not all exempt from the reproaches which he addressed to the Pharisees of his time? In short, are they not all, in theory and practice, the pure expression of his doctrine?

Truth, being one of them, cannot be found in contrary affirmations. Jesus has not desired to give a double meaning to his words. If, then, the different sects contradict one another, if some consider as true that which others condemn as heresies, it is impossible that they are all right. If all had taken the true sense of the evangelical teaching, they would have taken the same ground of belief, and not formed different sects. That which will not pass away is the true sense of the words of Jesus; that which will

disappear is that false sense which men have built upon his words. Jesus' mission being that of bringing to men God's thoughts, his pure doctrine alone can be their expression; for that reason he has said, "Every plant which my heavenly Father has not planted will be destroyed."

27. *The Corner-Stone.*—ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXI.—42. Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?

43. Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

44. And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

45. And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

46. But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

28. The teachings of Jesus have become the corner-stone; that is to say, the stone which is the foundation of the new edifice of faith, elevated upon the ruins of the ancient one of old. The Jews, princes, priests, Pharisees, having rejected this word, it has crushed them, as it will crush those who since that time have slighted it, or misconstrued the sense of it, to aid ambition.

29. *Parable of the Vine-Dressers who were Homicides.* — ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXI. — 33. Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-press in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country:

34. And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it.

35. And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36. Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise.

37. But last of all he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.

38. But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance.

39. And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him.

40. When the lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

41. They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

30. The Father is God; the vine which he has planted is the law which he has established; the vine-dressers, to whom he has rented his vine, are the men who must teach and practise his law; the servants, whom he sent to them, are the prophets

whom they have killed; his son, whom he has at length sent, is Jesus whom they have in like manner destroyed. How, then, will the Lord treat the prevaricating attorneys of his law? He will treat them as they have acted towards his ambassadors; he will fill their places with others, who will render better account of his goodness, and of the conduct of his flock. Thus has it been with the scribes, with the princes, priests, and Pharisees; thus will it be when he will come again to ask an account of each one of that which he has made of his doctrine. He will take away authority from him who may have abused it; for he desires that justice be administered in his vineyard according to his law.

After nineteen centuries of growth, humanity, arrived at the virile age, is ripe to comprehend that which Christ has only touched upon, because, as he says himself, it could then not have been comprehended. What has been effected by those who during this long period have been charged with its religious education? To see indifference be supplanted by faith in it, and infidelity, or unbelief in God, erect a faith upon it. At no other epoch, indeed, has scepticism and disbelief in God been more manifest than to-day. If a few of the sayings of Christ have been veiled in allegory, in respect to all that which concerns the rule of conduct, the connection of man with man, the moral principles of whom he makes the express condition of salvation ("Spiritism according to the Gospel," chap. 15), it is clear, explicit, and without ambiguity.

What have men done with his maxims of charity, of love, and of tolerance? with the exhortations he

has given his disciples to convert men by gentleness and persuasion, by simplicity, humility, by unselfishness, and all the virtues of which he has been the example? The anathema and malediction have been cast at men for acknowledging him as their Master. They have been slain in the name of him who has said, "All men are brothers." They have made a jealous, cruel, vindictive, and partial God of him whom he has proclaimed infinitely just, good, and merciful. They have sacrificed to this God of peace and of truth thousands more of victims at the stake, by tortures and persecutions, than the pagans have ever sacrificed to false gods. They have sold prayers and favors from heaven in the name of him who has chased those who sold from the Temple, and who has said to his disciples, "Freely you have received, freely give." What would Christ say to all this if he lived among us to-day? if he saw his representatives ambitious for the honors, the riches, the power and pomp of the princes of this world, whilst he, more kingly than the kings of the earth, made his *entrée* into Jerusalem seated upon an ass? Would he not do right if he said to them, "What have you made of my teachings, you who worship the golden calf, and address the greater part of your prayers to the rich, and the meagre part to the poor? As I have said to you, the last shall be first, and the first last, in the kingdom of heaven." If it is not so carnally, it is so spiritually; and, as the master of the parable, he will come to demand an account of his vine-dressers of the product of the vine when the harvest shall come.

31. *One Flock and One Shepherd.*—ST. JOHN,

CHAP. X. — 16. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.

32. By these words Jesus announces clearly that some day men will have only one religious belief. But how can this unity be effected? The thing appears difficult, if one considers the differences which exist between religions, the antagonism which exists between their respective adepts, their obstinacy in believing themselves in exclusive possession of the truth. All desire unity of faith; but all flatter themselves that it will be made to their profit, and no one understands how to make concessions to his beliefs. However, unity will be in religion, as well as in all social, political, and commercial affairs, by the lowering of the barriers which separate nations, by the assimilation of manners, laws, and language. The nations of the entire world fraternize already, like the provinces of the same empire. They hasten this unity: they desire it. It will be done by the force of things, because it will become a necessity to tighten the bonds of fraternity between nations. It will be done by the development of human reason, which will make them comprehend the puerility of these differences; by the progress of the sciences, which demonstrates each day the material errors upon which they lean, and detaches little by little the decayed stones of their foundations.

If science demolishes in religions that which is the work of men, and the fruit of their ignorance of the laws of nature, it cannot destroy, notwithstand-

ing the opinion of some, that which is the work of God and of eternal truth. By clearing away the accretions of error it prepares the way for unity. In order to arrive at unity, religions must meet upon a neutral ground, however common to all. In order to bring this about, all will have to make concessions and sacrifices, more or less great, according to the multiplicity of particular dogmas. But, by virtue of the principle of immutability that they all possess, the initiative concession should come from the official camp. Instead of taking their starting-point from on high, it will be taken below by the initiative individual. It has been operating some time by a movement of decentralization, which is tending towards the acquisition of an irresistible force. The principle of immutability, which religions have hitherto considered as an ægis, *conservatrix*, will become a destructive element on account of the unchangeable creeds. Whilst society marches ahead of them, they will be overflowed, then absorbed in the current of progressive ideas. Among the people who detach themselves wholly or in part from the principal churches, the number of which is constantly increasing, if a few of them desire no other belief, the immense majority who cannot be satisfied with no place of worship desire something.

This something has not yet taken a definite form in their thoughts; but they have a presentiment of it. They lean to the same object by different roads; and it is through them that the movement of concentration towards unity will commence. Judging from the present state of opinion and knowledge, the religion which must one day attract all men under

the same banner shall be that which will the best satisfy the reason and legitimate aspirations of the heart and mind ; which shall not at any point conflict with positive science ; which, instead of being immovable, will follow humanity in its progressive march without allowing itself ever to be outrun ; which shall be neither exclusive nor intolerant ; which shall be the emancipator of intelligence by admitting only a reasonable faith, that of which the moral code shall be the purest, the most rational, the most in harmony with social needs ; in short, that which is the best adapted to found upon the earth the reign of goodness by the practice of charity and universal fraternity.

Among existing religions those which approach nearest these normal conditions will have less concessions to make. If one of them have all the requirements necessary, it will naturally become the pivot of the future unity. This unity will be formed around that which will leave the least for reason to desire, not by an official decision, — for one cannot regulate the conscience, — but by individual and voluntary adhesions. That which supports antagonisms between religions is the idea that each one has its particular god, and their pretension to having the only true and most powerful one which is in constant hostility with the gods of the other creeds, and occupied in combating their influence. When they shall have become convinced that there is only one God in the universe, and that he is the same that they adore under the names of Jehovah, Allah, or Deus ; when they shall be in accord upon his essential attributes, — they will comprehend that one Being alone



can have only one will; they will extend their hands to him as servants of the same Master, and as children of the same Father; and they will have made a great stride towards unity.

33. *Advent of Elias.* — ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XVII. — 10. And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes that Elias must first come?

11. And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things.

12. But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13. Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

34. Elias was already returned in the person of John the Baptist ("Gospel according to Spiritism," chap. 4, No. 10). His new advent has been announced in an explicit manner. Now, as he can only return in a new body, it is a formal consecration of the principle of the plurality of existences ("Gospel according to Spiritism," chap. 4).

35. *Announcement of the Comforter.* — ST. JOHN, CHAP. XIV. (See "Gospel according to Spiritism," chap. 6.) — 15. If ye love me, keep my commandments.

16. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

17. Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world

cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

26. But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

36. ST. JOHN, CHAP. XVI. — 7. Nevertheless I tell you the truth; it is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

8. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment:

9. Of sin, because they believe not on me;

10. Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more;

11. Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.

12. I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

13. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come.

14. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall show it unto you.

37. This prediction, without doubt, is one of the most important, in a religious point of view, because it verifies in the most conclusive manner that Jesus has not said all that he had to say, because that he would

not have been comprehended even by his apostles, since it is to them he addresses his words. If he had given secret instructions to them, they would have mentioned it in the Gospels. Since he has not told every thing he knew to his disciples, their successors have known no more than themselves of it. They themselves have been able to misconstrue the sense of his words, to give a false impression of his ideas, often veiled under the parabolic form.

The religions founded upon the Gospels can then not be said to be in possession of all the truth, since the completion of them has been postponed to a subsequent time. Their principle of immutability is a protestation against even the words of Jesus. He announces, under the name of "Comforter" and "Spirit of Truth," he who must teach all things and make them recall that which he has said. Then his teaching was not complete. Moreover, he predicted that they will have forgotten that which he has said, and that they will have altered the nature of it, since the Spirit of Truth must make them recall it, and in concert with Elias re-establish all things; that is to say, according to the true idea of Jesus.

38. When ought this new revelator to come? It is very evident, that, if at the epoch where Jesus spoke, men were not in a state to comprehend the things which remained for him to say, in a few years they could acquire the necessary light. For intelligence in regard to certain parts of the gospel, with the exception of its moral precepts, a knowledge which progress in the sciences alone could give was necessary, which must be a work of time and of many generations. If, then, the new Messiah had

come shortly after Christ, he would not have found the ground prepared for him, and he would not have accomplished more than Christ.

Now, from the time of Christ to our day, no one great revelation has been produced which might have completed the knowledge of the gospel, and which might have elucidated the obscure parts of it,—a certain indication that the messenger had not yet appeared.

39. Who must this messenger have been? By Jesus saying, “I will pray my Father, and he will send to you another Comforter,” indicates clearly that it is not himself: otherwise he would have said, “I will return to complete that which I have taught you.” Then he adds, “That he may abide with you forever, and be in you.” The latter would not grasp the idea of an incarnated being who can live eternally with us, and still less be in us, but is comprehended very well of a doctrine which, when it has been assimilated, can be eternally in us. The Comforter is, then, in the thought of Jesus, the personification of a sovereignly consoling doctrine, of which the inspiring Spirit is truth.

40. Spiritism realizes, as has been demonstrated (chap. I.), all the conditions of the Comforter promised by Jesus. It is not an individual doctrine,—a human conception. No one can tell the creator of it. It is the product of the collective teachings of the spirits, at which presides the Spirit of Truth. It expresses nothing of the truth: it completes and elucidates it. By the aid of the new laws that it reveals, joined to that of science, it enables us to comprehend that which was unintelligible,

to admit the possibility of that which infidelity regarded as inadmissible. It has had its prophets and harbingers, who have predicted its coming. By its moralizing power it is preparing for the reign of goodness upon the earth. The doctrine of Moses, incomplete, has remained circumscribed to the Jewish people. That of Jesus, more complete, has been spread over all the earth by Christianity, but has not converted the whole world. Spiritism, more complete still, having roots over all the earth, will convert all.<sup>1</sup>

41. Christ's saying to the apostles, "Another will come later, who will teach you that which I cannot tell you now," proclaimed by that the necessity of re-incarnation. How could these men profit, then, by the more complete teaching which must be given subsequently? how would they be more apt to comprehend it if they were not to live again? Jesus would have said an inconsistent thing if the future men were, according to the common doctrine, to be new men, of souls which arose from nothingness to birth. Admit, to the contrary, that the apostles, and the men of their time, have lived since, that they still live again to-day, the promise of Jesus is found justified. Their intelligence, which must have been developed by contact with social progress, can bear now that which it could not then. With re-incarnation the promise of Jesus would have been an illusory one.

<sup>1</sup> All philosophical and religious doctrines bear the name of the individual founder. They say, the Mosaic, Christianity, Mohammedanism, Buddhism, etc. The word Spiritism, to the contrary, recalls no personality: it encloses a general idea, which indicates at the same time the character and multiple source of the doctrine.

42. If they say that this promise was realized on the day of Pentecost by the descent of the Holy Spirit, one would reply that the Holy Spirit has been able to inspire them, that he has opened their intelligence, developed in them medianimic aptitudes which were to facilitate their mission; but as nothing more, other than that Jesus had taught them, has been given to them, one can find no trace of a special teaching. The Holy Spirit has, then, not realized that which Jesus announced as the Comforter: otherwise the apostles would have elucidated, while living, all which has remained obscure in the Gospels to this day, and the contradictory interpretation of which has given rise to innumerable sects, which have been divided, in regard to Christianity, since the first century.

43. *Second Coming of Christ.* — ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XVI. — 24. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

25. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.

26. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

27. For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.

28. Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

44. ST. MARK, CHAP. XIV.—60. And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witness against thee?

61. But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?

62. And Jesus said, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

63. Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses?

45. Jesus announces his second coming; but he does not say he will return with a carnal body, neither that the Comforter will be personified in him. He presents himself as coming in spirit, in the glory of his Father, to judge the good and wicked, and render to each one according to his works, when the time shall be accomplished. This saying, "There are some standing here who will not see death until they have seen the Son of man come into his kingdom," seems a contradiction, since it is certain that he has not come during the life of any one of those who were present. Jesus could not, however, be deceived in a prophecy of this nature, and above all in a contemporary fact which concerned him personally. At first it is necessary to demand if his words have always been faithfully rendered. One can doubt it when one thinks that he has written nothing himself; that a compilation of his teachings has not been made until after his death. And, when one sees the same discourse nearly always reproduced in dif-

ferent terms by each evangelist, it is an evident proof that they are not the textual expressions of Jesus.

It is also probable that the sense has been sometimes altered in passing through successive translations. On the other hand, it is certain, that, if Jesus had said all that he could have said, he would have explained all things in a distinct and precise manner which had not given place to any equivocation, as he does it for moral principle; whilst he must have veiled his thoughts upon subjects which he has not judged proper to propose to them. The disciples, persuaded that the present generation must be the witness of that which he announced, must have interpreted the thought of Jesus according to their idea. They have been able, consequently, to draw from it a more absolute sense of the present than he has perhaps intended to convey himself. Whatever it may be, the fact is there, which proves that the circumstances have not happened as they have believed they would.

46. A capital point which Jesus has not been able to develop, because that men of his time were not sufficiently prepared for this order of ideas and its consequences, but of which he has, however, based the principle, as he has done for all things: this is the great and important law of re-incarnation. This law, studied and brought to the light of day by Spiritism, is the key of many passages of the Gospel, which without that would appear nonsensical.

It is in this law that one can find the rational explanation of the above words by admitting them as textual. Since they cannot be applied to any one of the apostles, it is evident they refer to the future



reign of Christ; that is to say, in the time when his doctrines, better comprehended, will be the universal law. By telling them that some who were present would see his coming, could not be understood in the sense that he would inhabit the carnal body at this epoch. But the Jews imagined they were to see all that Jesus announced, and took his allegories literally. Finally, a few of his predictions have been accomplished in their time,—such as the ruin of Jerusalem, the misfortunes which followed it, and the dispersion of the Jews; but he saw farther, and, in speaking of the present, he makes constant allusion to the future.

47. *Precursory Signs.* — ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXIV. — 6. And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

7. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places.

8. All these are the beginning of sorrow.

48. ST. MARK, CHAP. XIII. — 12. Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

49. ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXIV. — 15. When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation,

spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place (whoso readeth, let him understand) :

16. Then let them which be in Judæa flee into the mountains :

17. Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house :

18. Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes.

19. And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days !

20. But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day :

21. For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

22. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved : but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

50. ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXIV. — 37. But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

38. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark.

51. ST. MARK, CHAP. XIII. — 32. But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

52. ST. JOHN, CHAP. XVI. — 20. Verily, verily, I

say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

21. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world.

22. And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.

53. ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXIV.—11. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

12. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

13. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

14. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.

\* 54. This picture of the end of time is evidently allegorical, as the greater part of them are which Jesus presented. The images which they contain are colored in a way to make a deep impression upon intelligences corroded with sin and ignorance. In order to strike these clouded spirits, it was necessary to paint vigorously with glaring colors. Jesus addressed himself particularly to the people who were the least enlightened, those incapable of comprehending metaphysical abstractions, and of seizing the delicacy of forms. In order to reach the

heart it was necessary to speak to the eyes by the aid of material signs, and to the ears by the vigor of language.

As a natural consequence of this disposition of mind, supreme power could not, according to the belief then, manifest itself only by extraordinary or supernatural things. The more impossible they were, the more ready were they to accept them. The Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with great majesty, surrounded by his angels, and with the sound of trumpets, seemed to them much more imposing than a being invested with moral power alone. So the Jews, who expected the Messiah to be a king of the earth, mighty above all kings, to place their nation in the first rank among them, to raise up again the throne of David and Solomon, would not recognize him in the humble son of the carpenter without material authority, treated as insane by some, and as a tool of Satan by others. They could not comprehend how a king could be without a place to lay his head, and whose kingdom was not of this world. However, this poor, despised man of Judæa has become the greatest among the great. He has conquered by his sovereignty more kingdoms than the most powerful potentates. With his word alone, and with the aid of a few miserable fishermen, he has revolutionized the world; and it is to him that the Jews will owe their rehabilitation.

55. Allow us to observe, that, among the ancients, earthquakes and the obscurement of the sun were necessary symbols of all events and all sinister pre-sages. One finds them at the death of Jesus, of Cæsar, and as occurring a multitude of times in the history

of paganism. If these phenomena were produced as often as has been related, it would appear impossible that men had not preserved the memory of them by tradition. To this is added that of the stars having fallen from heaven, which is evidently a fiction, as one knows now stars cannot fall.

56. However, under these allegories are concealed great truths. Firstly, it is the announcement of calamities of all kinds, which will strike and decimate humanity, — calamities engendered by a great contest between good and evil, faith and infidelity, progressive and retrogressive ideas. Secondly, that of the diffusion over all the earth of the gospel re-established in its primitive purity. Then the reign of goodness, which will be that of peace and universal fraternity, will arise from the code of evangelical morals put in practice by all nations.

This will truly be the reign of Jesus, since he will preside at its establishment, and men will live under the ægis of his law, — a reign of goodness; for, said he, “after days of affliction will come days of joy.”

57. When will these things be accomplished? “No one knows,” says Jesus, “not even the Son of man;” but, when the moment shall have come, men will be warned of it by precursory indications.

These signs will not take place in the sun or in the stars, but in the social state, as well as in phenomena which partake more largely of the moral quality than the physical, which one can in part deduce from his allusions to it. It is very certain that this change could not have been operated during the life of the apostles: otherwise Jesus would not have been ignorant of it. Moreover, such a transformation could

not take place in a few years. However, he speaks to them as if they were to be witnesses of it. He meant by it that they were to be reborn into life for this epoch, and to work themselves at the transformation. Sometimes he speaks of the approaching end of Jerusalem, and takes this fact as a point of comparison for the future.

58. Is it the end of the world which Jesus announces by his second coming, and when he says, "The end of the world will come when the gospel shall have been preached over all the earth"? It is not rational to suppose that God will destroy the world precisely at the moment when it will enter into the way of moral progress by the practice of evangelical teachings. Nothing, moreover, in the words of Christ indicates a universal destruction, which, under such conditions, would not be justified. The general practice of evangelical truths must lead to an amelioration of the moral state of men, will lead of itself to the reign of good, and will lead the downfallen from the errors of his ways. He refers, then, to the end of the old world, of the world governed by prejudices, pride, egotism, fanaticism, infidelity, cupidity, and all the bad passions to which Christ alludes when he says, "The end will come when this gospel shall have been preached over all the earth;" but this will lead to a struggle from which will proceed the evils which he predicts.

59. *Your Sons and Daughters shall prophesy.* — ACTS, CHAP. II.—17. And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:

18. And on my servants and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy.

60. If one considers the present state of the moral and physical world, the tendencies, aspirations, and presentiments of the masses, the decadence of old ideas which have struggled in vain for a century against new ideas, one cannot doubt that a new order of things is being prepared, and that the old world is reaching its end. If now, by taking the true sense of the allegorical form of certain of his pictures, and comparing them with the present state of society and of the world, one cannot deny that many of his predictions are receiving their accomplishment to-day: whence it is reasonable to conclude that we are on the borders of the time announced, which is confirmed at all points of the globe by the spirits who manifest themselves.

61. Thus, as one has seen (chap. I.), the advent of Spiritism, coinciding with other circumstances, realizes one of the most important predictions of Jesus by the influence which it must forcibly exercise over ideas. It is, besides, clearly announced in this passage of the Acts of the Apostles: "In the latter days, saith the Lord, it shall come to pass that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; your sons and your daughters shall prophesy." This is an unmistakable announcement of the prevalence of mediumship, which is revealed in our day in individuals of all ages, sexes, and conditions, and in consequence of the universal manifestation of the spirits; for without the spirits there would not be mediums.

This, it has been said, will arrive in the latter days. Since it is not the end of the world, but its regeneration, we must understand this prophecy to imply, the last days of the moral world which is at an end ("Gospel according to Spiritism," chap. 21).

62. *The Last Judgment.*—ST. MATTHEW, CHAP. XXV. ("Gospel according to Spiritism," chap. 15.)  
—31. When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory:

32. And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats:

33. And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:

35. For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in:

36. Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me.

37. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink?

38. When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee?

39. Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

40. And the King shall answer and say unto them,



Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.

41. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels :

42. For I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat : I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink :

43. I was a stranger, and ye took me not in : naked, and ye clothed me not : sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44. Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee ?

45. Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.

46. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment : but the righteous into life eternal.

63. The reign of goodness being established upon the earth, it is necessary that spirits hardened in evil, and those who would be able to bring trouble to it, should be excluded. God has given them the necessary time for their amelioration ; but the moment when the globe must elevate itself into the hierarchy of worlds, by the moral progress of its inhabitants being arrived, the sojourn, as spirits and incarnated beings, will be forbidden those who shall not have profited by the instructions which they have been receiving in the same. They will be exiled into inferior worlds, as were formerly those of the Adamic

race upon our earth, whilst their places will be filled by better spirits. It is this separation at which Jesus will preside, which is represented by these words of the last judgment: The good will be on my right hand and the wicked on my left (chap. XI., No. 31 and following).

64. The doctrine of a last judgment, unique and universal, putting an end to humanity, conflicts with reason in this sense: that it would imply the inactivity of God during the eternity which has preceded the creation of the earth, and the eternity which will follow its destruction. One would naturally demand of what use the sun, the moon, and stars would be, which, according to Genesis, have been made for the illumination of this earth. One is astonished that a work so immense should have been made for such a short space of time, and for the profit of beings of whom the greater part were condemned in advance to eternal suffering.

65. Materially speaking, the idea of a unique judgment was, to a certain point, admissible to those who sought not the reason of things, when they believed all humanity concentrated upon this earth, and that the whole universe was made for its inhabitants. It is inadmissible since it is known there are millions of similar worlds in which humanity is perpetuated during all eternity, and among which the world is an imperceptible point. One sees by this fact alone that Jesus was right in saying to his disciples, "There are many things which I cannot tell you, for you would not comprehend them;" for the progress of science was indispensable to the healthy interpretation of some of his words. Assur-

edly the disciples, St. Paul and the first of them, would have established otherwise certain dogmas if they had known the principles of astronomy, geology, physics, chemistry, physiology, and psychology, which are known to-day. Thus Jesus has postponed the complement of his instructions, and announced that all things were to be re-established.

66. Morally speaking, a positive judgment to which there is no appeal is irreconcilable with the infinite goodness of the Creator, whom Jesus constantly presents to us as a good Father, leaving always a way open for repentance, and ready ever to extend his arms to the prodigal son. If Jesus had understood the judgment in this sense, he would have contradicted his own words. Then, if the last judgment must surprise men suddenly in the midst of their ordinary work, and mothers at the point of child-birth, one asks what object God has in it. He who does nothing uselessly or unjustly, why should he cause children to be born and create new souls at this supreme moment of the extermination of humanity, in order to make them pass into judgment from their mothers' bosoms before they were conscious beings, while others have had thousands of years to acknowledge him? On which side, right or left, will pass these souls who are not yet either good or bad, and to whom the way of all subsequent progress is henceforth closed, since humanity will exist no longer? (chap. II.)

Let those whose reason is contented with similar beliefs preserve them. It is their right, and no one should blame them; but let them not expect the rest of the world to join them in their belief. The judg-

ment looked at in the emigration point of view is rational. It is founded upon the most rigorous justice, as it leaves eternally to the spirit its free will, as by it no partiality is shown to any one, as an equal latitude is given by God to all his creatures, without exception to progress; for the door of heaven is always open for those who are worthy of entering therein: but the annihilation of the world would comprise only the destruction of the body, and would bring no interruption to the progressive march of the spirit. Such is the consequence of plurality of worlds and of existences. According to this interpretation, the name "last judgment" is not correct, since spirits pass by similar spheres to each renewal of worlds which they inhabit, until they have attained a certain degree of perfection. There is then, properly speaking, not a last judgment; but there are general judgments at all the epochs of partial or total renewal of the population of worlds, in consequence of which great emigrations and immigrations of spirits are brought about.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### THE TIME HAS ARRIVED.—SIGNS OF THE TIME.— THE NEW GENERATION.

1. *Signs of the Time.*—The time appointed by God has arrived, is said to us on all sides, where great events have been accomplished for the regeneration of humanity. In what sense is it necessary to understand these prophetic words? To the infidel they are of no importance; to their eyes, it is only the expression of a puerile belief without foundation: for the greater number of the believing, they have something mysterious and supernatural, which seems to be the harbinger of the overturning of the laws of nature. These two interpretations are equally erroneous,—the first, in that which implies a denial of Providence; the second, in that these words announce no perturbation of the laws of nature, but their accomplishment.

2. All is harmony in creation. All reveals a foresight, the effects of which are wanting neither in the smallest nor largest of God's works. We must then, firstly, discard irreconcilable caprice with the divine wisdom. Secondly, if our epoch is marked for the accomplishment of certain things, it is because there is a reason for their accomplishment in the onward march of all things. Our globe, like all which exists,

is submitted to the law of progress. It progresses physically by the transformation of the elements which compose it, and morally by the purification of the embodied and disembodied spirits who people it. The progress of the two is a parallel one; for the habitation becomes perfected according to the degree of perfection of its inhabitant. Physically, the globe has been submitted to transformations, ascertained by science, which have successively rendered it habitable for beings more and more perfected; morally, humanity progresses by the development of intelligence of the moral sense and gentleness of manners.

At the same time, as the amelioration of the globe has been accomplished under the empire of material forces, men have concurred in it by the efforts of their intelligence. They have learned how to make unwholesome localities healthy, rendering communications with one another easier, and the soil more productive.

This double progress is accomplished in two ways, —one slow, gradual, and insensible; the other by sudden changes, to each one of which has been operated a more rapid upper movement, which mark in distinct characters the progressive periods of humanity. These movements, subordinate in details to the free will of man, are in a measure necessary or inevitable in their relation to the whole, because they are submitted to laws like those operated in the germination, growth, and maturity of plants; whereas the object of humanity is progress, notwithstanding the tardy march of some individualities. This is why the progressive movement is sometimes partial, —that is to say, limited to a race or one nation, —at other times general.

The progress of humanity is effected then by virtue of a law. Now, as all laws of nature are the eternal work of wisdom and divine prescience, all which is the effect of these laws is the result of the will of God,—not of an accidental, capricious will, but of an immutable one. Then, when humanity is ripe to take a higher degree in progression, one can say that the time appointed by God has arrived, as one speaks of the harvest season as having arrived with the maturity of its fruit.

3. While this progressive movement of humanity is inevitable, because it is natural, it does not follow that God is indifferent to it, and that, after having established laws, he is now in an inactive state, leaving things to take care of themselves. His laws are eternal and immutable without doubt, but only because his will itself is eternal and constant, and that his thought animates constantly all things. His thought which penetrates all things is the intelligent and permanent force which keeps all in harmony. If this thought should one moment cease to act, the universe would be like a clock without a pendulum. God watches, then, incessantly over the execution of his laws; and the spirits who people space are his ministers charged with the details according to the unfoldment of their functions in their degree of advancement.

4. The universe is at the same time an incommensurable mechanism, conducted by a number no less incommensurable of intelligences, an immense government, where every intelligent being has his active part assigned him under the eye of the Sovereign Master, whose unique will maintains unity every-

where. Under the empire of this vast regulating power, all moves, all operates in perfect order. That which seems like perturbations to us are biassed and isolated movements, which appear irregular only because our sight is circumscribed. If our vision could embrace the whole, we would see that these irregularities are only apparent, and that they harmonize with all.

5. The foresight of the progressive movements of humanity has nothing surprising in it to dematerialized beings who see the end towards which all things tend, some of whom possess the thought direct from God, and who judge by partial movements the length of time which will be necessary for a general one, as one judges in advance the time required for a tree to bear fruit, and as the astronomers calculate the epoch of an astronomical phenomenon by the time necessary for a star to accomplish its revolution.

6. But all those who announce these phenomena, the authors of almanacs who predict eclipses and facts in relation to the tides, are not certainly in a state to make by themselves the necessary calculations: they are only echoes, like secondary spirits, whose sight is limited, and who repeat only that which superior beings have pleased to reveal to them. Humanity has already accomplished incontestable progress. Men by their intelligence have attained to a knowledge of the sciences, arts, and material comforts never reached before. An immense progress still remains for them to realize, which is to make charity, fraternity, and union reign among them in order to assure to them their moral well-being. They could never accomplish this progress with



their present beliefs, their superannuated institutions, which are remains of another age, good for a certain epoch, sufficient for a transitory state, but which, having given all that it has to give, would only be a hinderance now, as a child is stimulated by moving powers which lose their power at a ripe age. It is not only the development of intelligence which is necessary to men, it is the elevation of sentiment; and for that reason it is necessary to destroy all that which excites in them undue egotism or pride. Such is the period upon which they are entering, and which will mark one of the most important phases of humanity.

This phase, which is being elaborated at this moment, is the necessary complement of the preceding state, as the manly age is that of youth. It could then be foreseen and predicted in advance, and thus they say that the times appointed by God have come.

7. In these times a partial change is not being enacted, a renovation limited to one country, to one people or nation, or one race. It is a universal movement which is operating in moral progress. A new order of things is being established, and the men the most opposed to it are in their ignorance working for it. The future generation, disembarassed of the dross of the old world, and formed of purer elements, will find itself animated with ideas and sentiments entirely different from the present one, which is passing away with gigantic strides. The old world will die, and live in history, as that of the Middle Ages, with its barbarous customs, is remembered in the present. Each one knows that we all desire something different from the present order of

things. After having exhausted in some respects the good which is the product of intelligence, one comes to comprehend that the complement of this well-being can be only in moral development. The more one advances, the more one feels that which is wanting, without, however, being able to define it clearly. It is the effect of the interior work which is being effected for regeneration. We have desires and aspirations which are the prelude to a better condition.

8. But a change as radical as that which is being elaborated cannot be accomplished without commotion. There will be an inevitable conflict in ideas. From this conflict will forcibly arise temporary perturbations, until the rubbish be cleared away, and the equilibrium be established. It is, then, from a battle of ideas that these grave events will arise, and not from inundations, or purely material catastrophes. The general inundations were the consequence of the state of formation of the earth. Now it is no more the centre of the globe which is agitated, but that of humanity at large.

9. Humanity is a collective being, in whom is operated the same moral revolutions as in each individual being, with this difference: one is accomplished from year to year, the other from century to century. Let one follow it in its evolutions through time, and one will see the life of the diverse races marked by periods which give to each epoch a particular physiognomy. Beside partial movements, there is a general movement, which gives impulsion to humanity entire; but the progress of each part of the whole is relative to its degree of advancement. For an exam-

ple, we will take a family composed of many children, of whom the younger is in the cradle, and the elder aged ten years. In ten years the elder will have become twenty years of age and a man; and the younger, ten, and, although more advanced, will still be a child, but in his turn will become a man. Thus is it with different fractions of humanity. The more backward advance, but would not know how to attain with one bound to the level of the more advanced.

10. Humanity is becoming adult. With new needs, more elevated and larger aspirations, it comprehends the emptiness of the ideas with which it has been fed, the insufficiency of its institutions for its happiness. It finds no more, in the existing state of things, the legitimate satisfactions to which it has been called. For this reason it shakes off its swaddling-clothes, and bounds, aided by an irresistible force, towards unknown shores to the discovery of new horizons less limited. It is at this moment, when its material sphere is too narrow for it, when the intellectual life outruns it, when the sentiment of spirituality expands itself, that men calling themselves philosophers hope to fill up the void left by belief in nothing beyond this life and in materialism. Strange aberration! These same men, who pretend to be pushing on in advance, are striving to circumscribe the limits of the narrow circle of matter from whence humanity aspires to extricate itself. They shut off the view of the infinite life, and say to it, as they point to the tomb, "There is nothing beyond."

11. The progressive march of humanity is operated in two ways, — the one gradual, slow, and insensible, if one considers well the epochs which have drawn to

a close, which is expressed by successive ameliorations in manners, laws, and customs, which do not fully unfold themselves until after a long space of time, like the changes which currents of water bring to the face of the globe; the other, by movements relatively sudden and rapid, similar to a torrent breaking its barriers, which enables it to jump over in a few years the time which it otherwise would have taken centuries to go over. It is, then, a moral inundation which ingulfs in a few instants the institutions of the past, and to which succeed a new order of things which little by little become fixed by measure as tranquillity re-establishes itself, and becomes positive. To him who lives long enough to embrace the two sides of the new phase, it seems that a new world is sprung from the ruins of the ancient one. The character, manners, customs, all are changed. It is true that new men, or, better still, regenerate ones, have sprung up. The ideas swept away by the generation which is extinct have made place for new ideas in the generation which is being educated. It is one of those periods of transformation, or of moral growth, which has reached humanity. From adolescence it passes to the manly or virile age. Past ideas cannot suffice for its new aspirations, for its new needs. It can no more be led by the same means. It pays no more for illusions and magical unrealities. For its ripe reason something more substantial is necessary. The present is too ephemeral. It feels that its destiny is more vast, and that corporeal life is too restrained to enclose it entirely. For this reason it looks deeply into the past, and into the future also, to discover the mystery of its existence, and draw from it a consoling security.

12. Whoever has meditated upon Spiritism and its consequences, and circumscribes it not to the production of a few phenomena, comprehends that it opens to humanity a new way, and unrolls to it infinite horizons. By initiating it into the mysteries of the invisible world, it shows to it its true *rôle* in creation, a perpetually active one, as well to the spiritual state as to the corporeal one. Man marches blindly no more. He knows from whence he came, where he is going, and why he is on the earth. The future shows its reality to him, disencumbered of ignorance, prejudice, and superstition. It is no more a vague hope. It is a palpable truth, as certain to him as the succession of day and night. He knows that his being is not limited to a few instants of an ephemeral existence; that the spiritual life is not interrupted by death; that he has already lived, that he will live again, and that of all he has acquired in perfection by labor nothing has been lost. He finds in his anterior existences the reason for that which now is; and, by that which man is doing now, he can conclude that which he will be some day. With the idea that individual co-operation and activity in the general work of civilization have been limited to the present life, that one has been nothing and will be nothing, gives to man no incentive for the present or future. What matters it to him that in the future man will be better governed, happier, more enlightened, kinder to one another, since it bears no fruit for him? Is not this progress lost upon him? What good will it do him to work for posterity if he will never be acquainted with it, if it is composed of strangers who will, after a little, enter themselves into

nothingness? Under the empire of a denial of a future for the individual, all forcibly shrinks to the narrow proportions of the moment and of personality. But, on the contrary, what amplitude is given to the thought of man by a certainty of the perpetuity of his spiritual being? What can be more rational, grander, more worthy of the Creator, according to which the spiritual and corporeal life are only two modes of existence which alternate themselves for the accomplishment of progress? What can be more just, more consoling, than the idea of the same beings progressing without ceasing, at first through generations on the same earth, afterwards from world to world onward and upward to perfection, without solution of continuity? All actions have, then, an object; for, by working for all, one works for himself, and reciprocally. As long as individual or general progress is never sterile in its results, it is profitable to future generations and individuals, who are none other than the past generations and individualities arrived at a higher degree of advancement.

13. Spiritual life is the normal and eternal life of the spirit; and incarnation is only a temporary form of its existence. Save the exterior vestment, then, there is, then, identity between the embodied and disembodied. These are the same individualities under two different aspects, belonging sometimes to the visible and sometimes to the invisible world, finding themselves again either in one or in the other, concurring in both to the same end by means appropriate to their situation. From this law flows that of perpetuity of connection between created beings.

Death does not separate them, and does not put an end to their sympathetic relations or reciprocal duties, from whence springs solidarity of all beings for each other, and each one for all; from which also comes fraternity. Men will not live happily upon the earth until these two sentiments shall have entered into their hearts and in their manners; for then they will conform to their laws and their institutions.

It is through these that the principal results of the transformation will be accomplished. But how to conciliate the duties of solidarity and fraternity with the belief that death renders forever men strangers to one another? By the law of the perpetuity of connections which bind together all beings, Spiritism founds this double principle upon the laws themselves of nature: it makes not only a duty of it, but a necessity. By that of the plurality of existences, man attaches himself to that which has been done, and that which will be done, to men of the past and those of the future. He can no more say that he has nothing in common with the dead, since both find each other again and again continually in this world and the other, in order to climb the ladder of progress together, and to lend mutual support to one another. Fraternity is no more circumscribed to a few individuals which chance assembles together during the ephemeral duration of life. It is perpetual as the life of the spirit, universal as humanity, which constitutes a great family, of which all the members are joined to one another at whatever epoch they may have lived.

14. Such are the ideas which spring from Spiritism,

and which will be created in all men when it shall be universally dispersed, comprehended, taught, and practised. With Spiritism, fraternity is synonymous with the charity preached by Christ. It is no more a vain word: it has its purpose in life. From the sentiment of fraternity is born that of the reciprocation of the social duties from man to man, from people to people, from race to race. From these two sentiments, well comprehended, will spring necessarily the most profitable institutions for the welfare of man.

15. Fraternity must be the corner-stone of the new social order. But there is no real, solid, and effective fraternity if it has not been supported upon an unchangeable base. This base is faith, — not the faith in such and such particular dogmas, which change with time and people, and at which the stone is cast, and in anathematizing it they sustain the antagonism to it, but the faith in fundamental principles which all the world can accept, — God, the soul, the future, individual progress as well as indefinite, the perpetuity of connection between individuals. When all men shall be convinced that God is the same to all; that this God, sovereignly just and good, can will no injustice; that evil comes from men, and not from him, — they will regard themselves as children of the same Father, and will extend to him the hand.

It is this faith which is given to Spiritism, and which will henceforth be the pivot upon which human beings will move, whatever be their mode of adoration and their particular beliefs, which Spiritism respects, but with which it desires not to occupy



itself. From this faith alone can spring veritable moral progress, because that it alone gives a logical sanction to legitimate rights and duties. Without it the right is that which strength gives, — duty a human code, imposed by constraint. Without it, what is man? A little matter, which is dissolved; an ephemeral being, which is made only to pass away. Genius, even, is but a spark which shines an instant, only to be extinguished forever. There is no certainty of any thing which is revealed to his eyes. In connection with such thoughts, where, really, are the rights and duties?

What is the object of progress? This faith alone makes man feel his dignity by the perpetuity and progression of his being, — not in a paltry future, circumscribed to personality, but one grand and splendid. This thought elevates it above the earth. It feels itself expand by thinking that it has its *rôle* in the universe; that this universe is its domain, which it will be able to pass over some day; and that death will not annihilate it, or make of it a useless being to itself and others.

16. The vast proportion of intellectual progress which has been accomplished is a great step, and marks the first phase of humanity; but alone it is impotent to regenerate it. So long as man will be governed by pride and egotism he will use his intelligence and his knowledge for the profit of his passions and personal interests. For this reason he applies them to the perfection of means for injuring others, and of destroying each the other. Moral progress alone can assure the happiness of men upon the earth by putting a rein upon their bad passions.

It alone can make harmony, peace, and fraternity reign between them.

It is this which will break down the barriers between them, which will destroy the prejudices of caste, silence the antagonisms of sects, by teaching men to regard themselves as brothers called to aid one another, and not to live at the expense of one another. It is moral progress, seconded by the progress of intelligence, which will lead men to one belief established upon the eternal truths, not subject to discussion; and for this accepted by all. The unity of belief will be the most powerful bond of union, the most solid foundation for universal fraternity, which has alway been broken by religious antagonisms, which divides people and families, which makes one see in a neighbor a person to fly from, —one to combat, exterminate, —instead of a brother whom we should love.

17. Such a state of things supposes a radical change in the sentiment of the masses, a general progress which could be accomplished only by departing from the circle of narrow ideas, and quitting the ground which fosters pride. At different epochs superior men have sought to lead men into this way; but humanity, yet too young, has remained deaf, and their teachings have been like good seed fallen among stones. Now humanity is capable of looking higher than it has done, in order to assimilate larger ideas, and comprehend that which it had never before comprehended. This generation which will disappear will carry with it its prejudices and errors; the generation which is being educated has drunk at a purer spring, is imbued with healthier ideas, will

impress on the world the ascensional movement by way of moral progress, which must mark the new phase of humanity.

18. This phase is already revealed by unmistakable signs, by attempts at useful reforms, by grand and generous ideas which are brought to light, and which commence to find echoes. Multitudes of protective, civilizing, and emancipating institutions are founded under the management and by the introductory movement of men evidently predestined to the work of regeneration; while each day the penal laws seem to be impregnated with a more humane sentiment. The prejudices of race are weakened. Nations commence to regard themselves as members of one great family. By the uniformity and facility of the means of transaction, they abolish the barriers which divide them. In all parts of the world they unite in universal assemblages for electing officers and passing laws, and for pacific interchange of sentiments. But to these reforms a base is wanting to complete, develop, and consolidate them,—a more general moral predisposition in order to bear fruit, and to be accepted by the masses. It is no less a characteristic sign of the time, the prelude of that which will be accomplished upon a larger ladder by measure, as the ground will become more propitious.

19. A sign no less characteristic of the period upon which we enter is the evident re-action in spiritualistic ideas. An instructive repulsion is manifested against materialistic ideas. The spirit of unbelief, which was carrying away the masses, ignorant or enlightened, and had made them reject with the form even the true basis of all faith, seems to have

been asleep, on the awakening from which one experiences a need of breathing a more life-giving air. Involuntarily, where the void has been made, one seeks something, a support, a hope.

20. In this great regenerative movement, Spiritism has a considerable *rôle*, not the ridiculous Spiritism invented by a jesting critic, but the philosophical Spiritism, such as whoever comprehends it must seek the almond under its shell. By the proofs it brings of fundamental truths, it fills the void which infidelity makes in ideas and beliefs; by the certitude which it gives of a future conformed to the justice of God, and which the most severe reason can admit, it tempers the bitterness of life, and hinders the fatal effects of despair; by making known new laws of nature, it gives the key of hitherto unknown phenomena and of insoluble problems, and kills at the same time infidelity and superstition. To it nothing is supernatural or miraculous: all is accomplished in the world by virtue of immutable laws. Far from substituting one exclusivism for another, it stands as an absolute champion of the liberty of conscience; it combats bigotry under all forms, and cuts it to the root by proclaiming salvation for all good men, and the possibility for the most imperfect of, by their efforts, expiation and reparation, to that perfection which alone conducts to supreme felicity.

Instead of discouraging the weak, it encourages them by showing them the haven to which they can attain. It does not say, "Outside of Spiritism is no salvation," but with Christ, Outside of charity is no salvation, no principal of union, no tolerance,

which will rally men round a common sentiment of fraternity, instead of dividing them into sects in enmity to each other. By this other principle, there is no unchangeable faith than that which can look reason face to face in all ages of humanity: it destroys the empire of blind faith, which annihilates reason by passive obedience which brutalizes; it emancipates the intelligence of man, and elevates his moral being. Consequently, it does not impose itself upon any one: it tells that which it is, what it wishes, and what it is, and waits for them to come freely, voluntarily; it wishes to be accepted by the reason, and not by force; it respects all sincere beliefs, and combats only infidelity, selfishness, pride and hypocrisy, which are the plagues of society, and the most serious obstacles to moral progress; but it gives the anathema to no one, not even to its enemies, because that it is convinced that the good road is open to the most imperfect.

21. If one supposes the majority of men imbued with these sentiments, one can easily figure the changes it would bring in social relations, — charity, fraternity, kindness towards all, tolerance for all beliefs: such will be their motto. It is the end towards which humanity is evidently tending without being very sure of the means of realizing them. It tries, it counts the pulse, but is arrested by active resistance, or the force of the inertia of the prejudices of stationary beliefs which are opposed to progress. These are resisting forces, which it must vanquish; and it will be the work of the new generation. If one follows the present course of things, one will recognize that all seems predestined to prepare the

way for it. There will be the double power of number and of ideas, and, moreover, the experience of the past.

22. The new generation will march them to the realization of all compatible humanitarian ideas with the degree of advancement to which it will have reached. Spiritism marching towards the same end, and realizing its views, they will meet each other on the same ground. Men of progress will find in the ideas of the Spiritists a powerful lever, and Spiritism will find in men new minds entirely disposed to welcome it. With this state of things, what will those do who would desire to place an obstacle in its way?

23. It is not Spiritism which creates social renovation: it is the maturity of humanity which makes this renovation a necessity. By its moralizing power, by its progressive tendencies, by the liberality of its views, by the generality of the questions which it embraces, Spiritism is, more than any other doctrine, qualified to second the regenerative movement: for that reason it is contemporary with it. It has come at the moment when it could be useful; for it also is the time arrived. Sooner, at an earlier date, it would have encountered insurmountable obstacles. It would have inevitably succumbed, because men, satisfied with that which they had, had not experienced a need for that which it brings. Now, born with the movement of fermenting ideas, it finds the earth prepared to receive it. Spirits, tired of doubt and of incertitude, frightened by the gulf that opens before them, welcome it as an anchor of salvation and a supreme consolation.

24. By saying that all humanity is ripe for salva-

tion, we do not wish to convey the idea that all individuals are so in the same degree: but many have by intuition the germ of new ideas, which circumstances will bring to light; then they will show themselves more advanced than they were supposed to be, and they will eagerly follow the impulsion of the majority. There are those, however, obstinately opposed, even among the most intelligent, and who assuredly will never embrace it, at least in this existence,—some of these in good faith by conviction, others by interest.

Those whose material interests are joined to the present state of things, and who are not advanced enough to sacrifice them, to whom the general good is of less account than their own, cannot see without apprehension the least reformatory movement. Truth is for them a secondary question, or, rather, truth for certain people is in that which causes them no trouble. All progressive ideas are to their eyes subversive ones: for this reason they vow implacable hate to them, and make towards them inveterate war. Too intelligent not to see in Spiritism an auxiliary of these ideas, and the elements of the transformation which they dread, because they are not far advanced enough to receive it, they force themselves to combat it. If they judged it to be without value or importance, they would not bother themselves with it. Besides, as we have already said, "The greater an idea is, the more adversaries it encounters, and the importance of it can be measured by the violence of the attacks of which it is the object."

25. The number of those who have not joined our ranks is still great without doubt; but what can they

do against the rising wave, except to throw a few stones at it? This wave is the generation which is being educated by it, whilst those who do not believe will disappear with the generation which is rapidly passing away. Until that they will defend every step of the ground. There is then an inevitable contest, but an unequal one; for it is that of a decrepit past, which falls into fragments against the juvenile future; of stagnation against progress; of the creature against the will of God, — for the times appointed by him are come.

26. *The New Generation.* — In order that man shall be happy upon the earth, it is necessary that it be peopled with good spirits in and out of the body who desire only good. This time having arrived, a great emigration is being accomplished at this moment among those who inhabit it. Those who return evil for evil, and in whom the desire to do right is not felt, being unworthy of the transformed state of the earth, will be banished from it, because they will bring only trouble and confusion, and would be an obstacle to progress. They will go to expiate their hardness of heart, some into inferior worlds, others with terrestrial races behind them in development, which will be the equivalent of inferior worlds, where they will carry their acquired knowledge, and where it will be their mission to teach undeveloped beings this knowledge. They will be replaced by better spirits, who will make justice, peace, and fraternity rule among them.

The earth, according to the intelligence gained from the spirits, must not be transformed by an inundation which would suddenly annihilate a gen-



eration. The present generation will gradually disappear, and the new one succeed in the same manner without any thing having been changed in the natural order of things. All externally will pass along as is usual, with this difference alone, which is an important one, that a part of the spirits which are incarnated here now will no more be incarnated here.

The children who will then be born, instead of being undeveloped and inclined to evil, will be more advanced spirits inclined towards good. It acts then much less upon a new corporeal generation than upon the new generation of minds; whilst those who will expect to see the transformation brought about by supernatural or miraculous effects will be disappointed.

27. The present epoch is a transition one; the elements of the two generations are mingling together. Placed at the intermediary point, we assist at the departure of one and at the arrival of the other. Each one signalizes itself by its own proper character. The two generations which follow each other have views and ideas totally opposed to one another. By the nature of the moral disposition, but more particularly by the intuitive and innate disposition, it is easy to distinguish to which of the two each individual belongs.

The new generation, being the founder of the era of moral progress, is distinguished generally by a precocious intelligence and reasoning powers, joined to the innate sentiment of goodness and of spiritualistic beliefs, which is the unmistakable sign of a certain degree of anterior advancement. It will not

be composed exclusively of eminently superior minds, but of those who, having progressed already, are pre-disposed to embrace all the progressive ideas, and apt to second the regenerative movement.

That which distinguishes, on the contrary, undeveloped minds is, firstly, the revolt against God by refusing to recognize any power superior to humanity; then the instinctive propensity to the degrading passions, to the anti-fraternal sentiments of egotism, of pride, of the attachment for all that which is material. These are the vices of which the earth must be purged by the removal of those who refuse to amend, because they are incompatible with the reign of fraternity, and as good men will suffer always by contact with them. When the earth shall have been delivered from them, men will march without hinderance towards that better future which has been reserved for them here below as the recompense for their efforts and perseverance, looking forward to a purification still more complete, which will open to them the *entrée* to superior worlds.

28. By this emigration of spirits it is not necessary to understand that all undeveloped spirits will be expelled from the earth, and condemned to live in inferior worlds. Many, on the contrary, will return here, — those who have yielded to temptation by the force of circumstances and example; those who appeared to be much worse than they really were.

Once delivered from the influence of matter, and the prejudices of the corporeal world, the greater part of them will see things in an entirely different light than when living, as we have numerous examples of it. In this they are aided by benevolent spirits who

are interested in them, and who try to enlighten them by showing them the wrong in the way they have pursued. By our prayers and exhortations we can ourselves contribute to their amelioration, because there is a perpetual connection, an unbroken chain, between the dead and living. The transformation is very simple, entirely a moral one, which is according to the laws of nature.

29. Allowing that the spirits of the new generation are new ones, but better, more advanced than the preceding ones, or ancient developed spirits, the result is the same. From the instant that they become inspired by better desires, the renovation takes place. There are then two categories of incarnated spirits, which are formed according to their natural dispositions,—on one side those tardy in progression who depart, and on the other the progressive ones who arrive. The condition of society in a nation or in the entire world will be according to the preponderance which one of these two categories has over the other. Let us suppose a nation, whatever may be their degree of advancement, composed of twenty millions of souls, the renovation being accomplished according to the measure of destruction among them in isolated cases or *en masse*, there necessarily comes a time when the production of progressive spirits is less than those of the opposite character, whom they count as rare representatives, without influence, whose efforts for good and for the predominance of progressive ideas are paralyzed. After a time, as some take their departure and others arrive, the two forces become equalized, and their influence becomes counterbalanced. Later the new-

comers are the majority, and their influence becomes the stronger one, although still impeded by the opposite influence. The latter, however, continuing to diminish whilst the others multiply, at last disappear. Then will come a time when the influence of the new generation will be exclusive; but this cannot be comprehended if one does not admit that there is a spiritual life independent of the material one.

30. We are assisting at this transformation in the conflict which is the result of the battle between contrary ideas, which are seeking to implant themselves. One marches with the flag of the past, the other with that of the future. If one examines the present state of the world, one will recognize that, taken as a whole, terrestrial humanity is still far from the intermediary point where the forces are balanced; that nations considered separately are at a great distance from one another upon this ladder of progress; that some have reached it, but that no one of them has passed beyond it. Moreover, the distance which separates them from the extreme points is far from being equal in duration; and, once the limit reached, the new route will be passed over with so much the more rapidity, as a multitude of circumstances will come to smooth the way.

Thus is accomplished the transformation of humanity. Without emigration, — that is to say, without the departure of spirits, who are not disposed to progress, who must not return, or who must not return until their moral condition is ameliorated, — terrestrial humanity would not remain indefinitely stationary, because the most undeveloped spirits advance in their turn; but centuries, and perhaps

thousands of years, would pass away before attaining the same result that a half century could produce by the first-named manner.

31. A common comparison will make this better comprehended. Let us suppose a regiment composed of a great majority of undisciplined and unruly men, those who in constant disorder are brought to feel the severity of the penal laws. These men are the stronger, because they are the more numerous: they are sustained, encouraged, and stimulated by example. The few good ones among them are without influence: their counsels are despised; they are scoffed at, badly treated by the others, and suffer from this contact. Is this not an emblem of society at present? Let us suppose that these men are withdrawn from this regiment one by one, ten by ten, hundred by hundred, and that they are replaced by an equal number of good soldiers, even by those who have once been expelled from it, but who have become seriously amended. At the end of some greater or less period of time, there will be the same regiment, but a transformed one: good order will have succeeded to disorder. Thus will it be with regenerated humanity.

32. The great collective departures have not alone for object the acceleration of the different departures, but they also transform more rapidly the minds of the masses by removing the bad influences from the way, and by giving a greater ascendancy to new ideas, because many are ripe for this transformation, notwithstanding their imperfections, while many depart to strengthen themselves at a purer source. Should they have remained in the same

midst and under the same influences, they would have persisted in their opinions, and in their manner of seeing things. A sojourn in the spirit-land suffices to open their eyes to the truth, because they see there that which they could not see on earth. The infidel, the fanatic, the absolutist, will then be enabled to return with innate ideas of faith, of tolerance, and of liberty. On their return they will find things changed, and will submit to the ascendancy of the new midst in which they will be born. Instead of making opposition to new ideas, they will be helpers towards them.

33. The regeneration of humanity does not absolutely require the complete renewal of the spirits. A modification in their moral dispositions suffices. This modification takes place with all those who are predisposed to it when they shall have freed themselves from the pernicious influence of the world. Those who return, then, are not always other spirits, but often the same ones, thinking and feeling otherwise.

When this amelioration is isolated and individual, it passes unperceived, and is without ostensible influence upon the world. Entirely different is the effect when it operates simultaneously over great masses of people; for then, according to the proportions of it in one generation, the ideas of a nation or a race can be profoundly modified by it. This is observed after great accidents which decimate a population. The destructive scourges do not destroy the spirit, but only the body: they accelerate the coming-and-going movement between the corporeal and spiritual world, and consequently the progressive

movement of embodied and disembodied spirits. It has been observed, at all historical epochs great social crises have been followed by an era of progress.

34. It is one of these general movements which is operating at this time, and which must lead to the repairing of humanity. The multiplicity of the means of destruction is a characteristic sign of the times; for they must hasten the expansion of the new germs. They are the leaves of autumn which must fall, but to which will succeed new leaves full of life; for humanity has its seasons, as individuals have their ages. The dead leaves of humanity fall, carried away by the tempestuous blasts of life, only to be reborn with still greater strength, with the same breath of life which is not annihilated, but purified.

35. To the materialist destructive scourges are calamities without compensation, without useful results, since, according to him, "They go to that bourne from whence no traveller returns." But for him who knows that death destroys only the envelope, they have not the same consequences, and cause not the least affright. He comprehends the object of it, and knows that men lose no more by dying together than separately, since, in one way or another, it is necessary to arrive there. Infidels will laugh at these things, and treat them as chimerical dreams; but, whatever they may say, they cannot escape the common law. They will fall in their turn like the others; and then what will occur? They say nothing; but they will live in spite of themselves, and be forced some day to open their eyes to the truth.